





GENEALOGY  
973.006  
AM3529A  
1919.  
PT.2









# AMERICANA

(AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE)



Vol. XIII

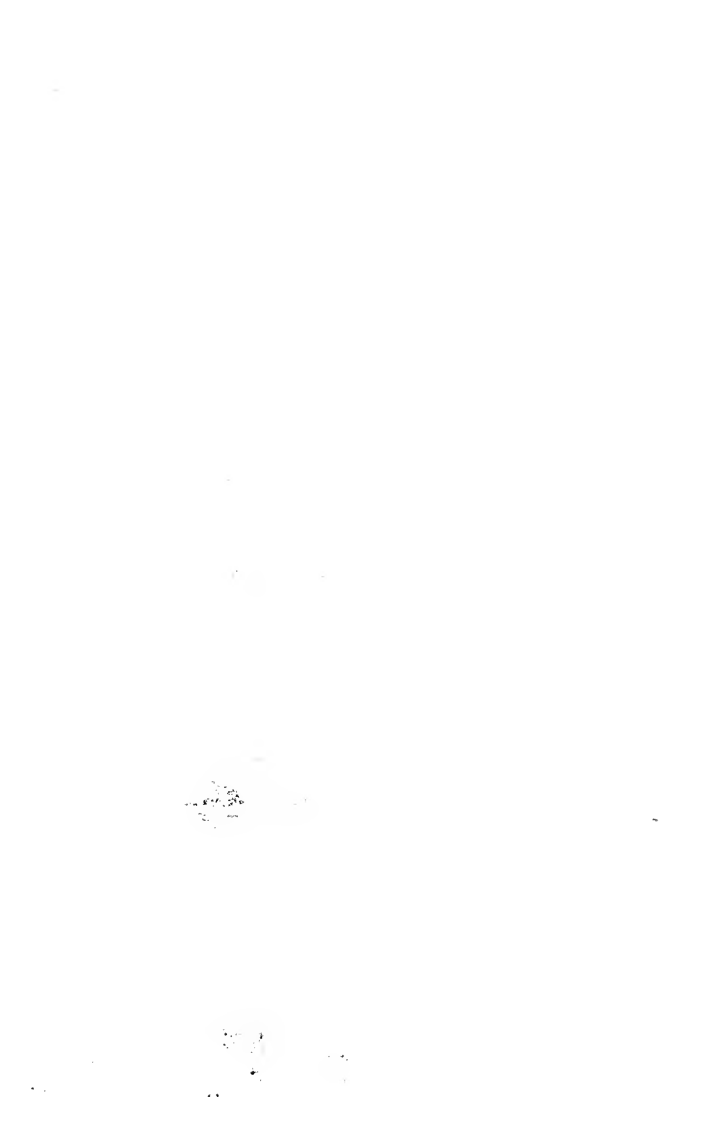
PT. 2.

July  
January, 1919—December, 1919

---

The American Historical Society  
265 Broadway  
New York

97678



ILLUSTRATED

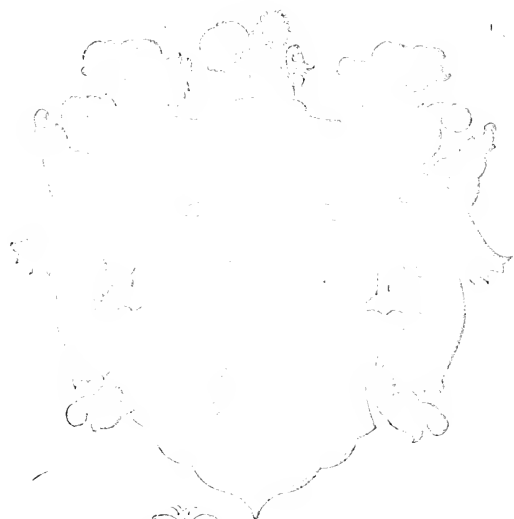


The American Historical Society, Inc.





ILLUSTRATED GAZETTE



Goodwin











THE MAYFLOWER



# AMERICANA

JULY, 1919

## Beginnings of New England



HE time had at length arrived when the Pilgrims were to leave the goodly and pleasant city which had been their home for nearly twelve years. Leyden had no direct navigation connection with the North Sea, it depended on inland water communication which was furnished by a canal passing near the Hague, and through Delft, reaching Delfthaven on the Maas or Meuse river, fifteen miles west of the ocean. The journey from Leyden to Delfthaven, a distance of twenty-four miles, was made in barges. In the harbor of Delfthaven was moored at the quay the *Speedwell*, a vessel they had purchased and which was to convey them to Southampton, England.

The colonists were aware that the battle of colonization would be a severe one, and there were those among them whose hearts failed. The younger and stronger and willing-hearted were selected for the journey; wives and children were left behind, until the hardships were overcome. More than half were ready to go, but not quite half could get ready in time, and it fell to Robinson's lot to stay with the larger number, while the ruling Elder Brewster accompanied the emigrants. A day was appointed for humiliation and prayer, which continued through the night. Robinson in an excellent discourse gave them the never to be forgotten advice, which shows him a man of rare moral exaltation, and one of the most liberal minds in the seventeenth century. He charged them "before God and his blessed angels to follow him no farther than he followed Christ, and if God should reveal anything to them by any other instrument of his, to be already to receive it as ever they were to receive any truth by his ministry, for he was very confident the

NOTE—Abridgement from "Tercentenary of New England Families, 1620-1920," Vol. I, lately from the press; American Historical Society, Inc., New York.



Lord had more truth and light to break out of his Holy Word." He also bewailed the state and condition of the reformed churches; censuring the Lutherans for refusing the truth of the Calvinists, and for the latter sticking where Calvin had left them. He declared it "not possible that full perfection of knowledge should break forth at once." He exhorted them to shake off the nickname of Brownists, to avoid separation from the godly people of the Church of England, and "rather to study union than division." He bade them not to loath to call another pastor or teacher, "for that flock which hath two shepherds was not endangered, but secured by it." Robinson was free from all pettiness and egotism. Working in one of the obscurest corners of the world, he succeeded in training and sending out a people that expounded and diffused his teachings into the institutions and habits of a great nation.

The last night of the stay of the colonists at Leyden was passed in the large house of the pastor in which their services were usually held. Here the night was spent in social enjoyment, a feast was given to the "removers," psalms were sung, and encouragement was given to those brave souls who were willing to venture all in the execution of a high resolve. Their friends from Leyden accompanied them to Delfthaven, and some of the Separatists of Amsterdam came likewise to the port. Then followed the indescribable parting; the Dutch spectators shed tears at the sight; words were few; "they were unable to speak to one another for the abundance of sorrow." Robinson's voice was at last heard in prayer, and around him they knelt, while he commended the emigrants to the keeping of God. The embarkation of the emigrants then took place, and the wind being fair, the sails of the *Speedwell* were set, those on board fired a salute, a volley of small shot and three pieces of ordnance, as a farewell to their friends on shore.

The *Speedwell* brought her passengers safely to Southampton, where they found the *Mayflower*, which vessel had come round from London. Thomas Weston, on the part of the Adventurers, was there to see them off. The discussion over the disputed articles was renewed, but to no effect; also he refused to make them further cash advances, and they had to raise money by selling some of their provisions. Prince says that seven hundred pounds sterling were spent at Southampton, and they carried about seventeen hundred





pounds with them. His authority was Bradford, but the latter has left no such statement.

The vessels put out to sea with about a hundred and twenty passengers; each vessel chose a governor and two or three assistants to preserve order and to equalize the disposition of their provisions. The *Mayflower* was a hundred and eighty tons burden; the *Speedwell* of sixty. They had not proceeded far on their journey when the *Speedwell* proved leaky, and both vessels put into Dartmouth. The necessary repairs having been made, once more both vessels put to sea. When a hundred leagues from land the master of the smaller vessel represented that she was incapable of making the voyage across the ocean. Again the voyagers returned to the English shores, landing at Plymouth. The excuse of the master of the *Speedwell* was believed simply to be a pretense so as to cancel his contract with the emigrants, with whom he had agreed to remain a year. The next resource was to divide the company, leaving the discontented and faint-hearted behind. Those who adhered to the enterprise crowded themselves into the *Mayflower*, huddled together so closely that even the shallop on the deck was damaged by being used as a sleeping place.

The *Speedwell* was sent back to London, and on September 6, 1620, the third attempt was made toward the setting sun, to cross the wide and expansive ocean, to reach home comforts and happiness in the New World. Little is recorded of the incidents of the voyage. The first part was favorably made; as they approached the American continent, storms were encountered which their overburdened vessel was scarcely able to sustain. Their destination was a point near the Hudson river, which was within the territory granted by the Virginia Company. The colonists, men, women and children, embarked on the *Mayflower*, numbered one hundred and two. The same number arrived in America that left England, though there was one death on the passage, William Button, and one birth, Oceanus, a son of Stephen Hopkins.

The narrow peninsula, sixty miles long, which terminates at Cape Cod, projects easterly from the main land of Massachusetts; it resembles in shape the human arm, bent rectangularly at the elbow and again at the wrist. At what is now Provincetown, at the extreme point of this projection, the *Mayflower* on a Saturday, near the close of autumn, dropped anchor.



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

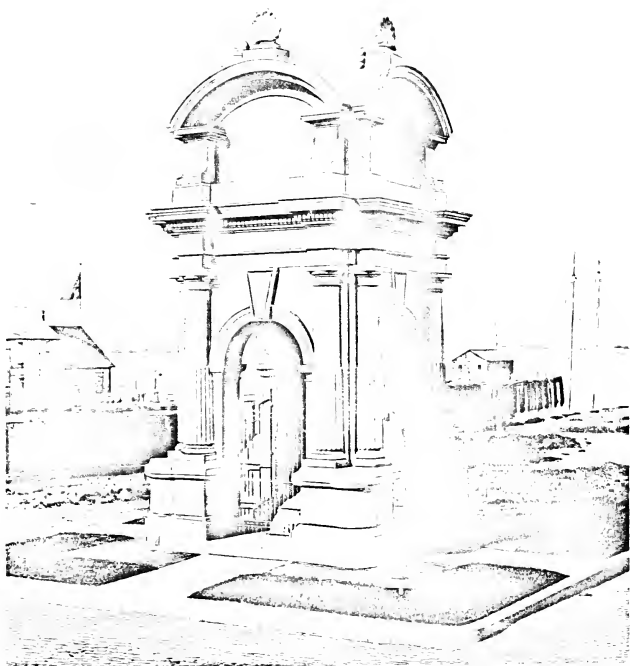
It was deemed necessary for an organization for the preservation of order and of the common safety, that an instrument should be prepared and signed. Some of the colonists while on shipboard had expressed views that when they came ashore they would use their own liberty, for none had power to command, as their patent was for Virginia, not for New England; therefore, they belonged to another government outside of the jurisdiction of the Virginia Company. The covenant that was executed and signed by forty-one of the adult passengers was as follows:

In the name of God, Amen. We whose names are underwritten; the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign lord, King James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland; King, Defender of the Faith, etc.: having undertaken for the glory of God and advancement of the Christian faith, and honor of our King and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern part of Virginia; do by these presents, solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof to enact, constitute and frame such joint and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitution, and offices, from time to time, as shall be thought meet and convenient for the general good of the colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. It witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names, at Cape Cod, the 11th of November, in the year of the reign of our sovereign lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and Scotland, the fifty-fourth, Anno Domini, 1620.

This agreement was signed in the cabin of the *Mayflower* by the following parties: John Carver, John Alden, John Howland, William Brewster, William Mullins, John Tilley, Edward Fuller, Moses Fletcher, Peter Brown, Thomas English, John Turner, John Goodman, Richard Britteridge, Edward Doty, Edward Winslow, Christopher Martin, Edward Tilley, Myles Standish, Richard Warren, Francis Cook, Francis Eaton, Degory Priest, George Soule, Thomas Rogers, James Chilton, Thomas Williams, Richard Clarke, Edward Lister, Isaac Allerton, William White, William Bradford, Samuel Fullar, Stephen Hopkins, Thomas Tinker, John Crackston, Gilbert Winslow, Richard Gardiner, John Ridgedale, John Billington, Edward Murgeson, John Allerton.

After the adoption of this compact for government, John Carver was chosen governor of the company. He was a native of England, and died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, April 5, 1621. He was a man





PLYMOUTH ROCK, THE GRANITE BOULDER THE STEPPING STONE OF THE PILGRIMS. DEC 21 1620. STILL OCCUPIES THE SAME POSITION AT THE FOOT OF A BLUFF OF LAND, ABOUT 20 FEET HIGH, KNOWN IN HISTORY AS "COLES HILL," IT BEING A PART OF SEVEN ACRES OF LAND GRANTED BY THE COURT, A.D. 1637, TO JAMES THE FIRST OF THE COLES FAMILY FROM ENGLAND TO LAND IN PLYMOUTH A.D. 1630.



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

of considerable wealth, which he devoted to the forwarding of the emigration of the pilgrims to America. He was a deacon of Robinson's church in Leyden, and was one of the messengers to secure a patent from the Virginia Company and the consent of the King to the emigration. His wife died in the first winter of the Plymouth Colony, and there was no issue.

In the afternoon of the adoption of the covenant, a party well armed was sent to reconnoitre the shore. They returned at evening reporting that they had seen neither persons nor dwelling, the country was well wooded, and the appearance of the soil promising. The shallop was hauled upon the beach and preparations made to repair it. Another land expedition was organized, and exploration of the surrounding country was made, but resulted only in the sight of a few savages in the distance, and the finding of four or five bushels of Indian corn. A week was spent in putting their tools in order and preparing lumber for a new boat. On November 27, 1620, another expedition was made in the shallop, which had been refitted. The weather was severe, no vestige of human life was found, though another parcel of corn and a bag of beans were found. The exploring party being worn out with exposure and fatigue, returned to the *Mayflower*. As soon as the state of the weather permitted, a party of ten set off in the shallop with eight seamen. This was to be their final expedition of discovery; the coast was searched for forty or fifty miles in a vain attempt to find a suitable harbor. Suffering from extreme exposure and being encountered by a gale that disabled their rudder, they finally landed on an island afterwards known as Clarke's Island, in Plymouth harbor. The next day the harbor was sounded and found fit for shipping; the land explored, and divers cornfields found, and running brooks. They returned to the *Mayflower* to the rest of their people with news that comforted their hearts. During the absence of the expedition, which was accompanied by Bradford, his wife, who remained on the *Mayflower*, fell overboard and was drowned.

No time was now lost. The *Mayflower* set sail for the harbor, and a landing was made under disagreeable conditions, the passengers on account of shallow water having to wade to shore in cold December weather. The death of James Chilton took place on board of the *Mayflower* before a landing was made; the birth of the first child in New England, Peregrine White, also took place on





## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

board of the ship. Including children, there were twenty-eight females in the company, eighteen of whom were wives of the emigrants.

\* \* \* \* \*

William Brewster, justly named the "Patriarch of the Plymouth Colony," was the moral, religious, and spiritual leader of the colony, and until his death its trusted guide. His early environments were of wealth and prosperity, therefore he was not brought up to arduous labors.

Young Brewster's education followed the lines given to the sons of the nobility and gentry. He matriculated December 3, 1580, at Peterhouse, the oldest of the fourteen colleges which afterward became the University of Cambridge; but he did not stay long enough to receive his degree. We find him after leaving Peterhouse in the service of William Davidson, Queen Elizabeth's Secretary of State; he accompanied him in August, 1585, to the Court of the Netherlands on a diplomatic mission. The downfall of Davidson occurred in 1587, and Brewster, leaving court circles, returned to Scrooby. At the time of his father's death he administered his estate, and succeeded him as postmaster. He resided at the Manor House, and was held in high esteem among the people, associating with the gentlemen of the surrounding country, and was prominent in promoting and furthering religion. Of a serious and religious mind, the forms and customs of the Established Church became abhorrent to him, and he became interested and active in the cause of the dissenters. Always loyal to the home government, he reluctantly accepted the fact that his conscientious scruples required his separation from the Established Church. He helped to form a dissenting society which met at his residence, thus forming the nucleus which constituted the Plymouth Pilgrims. The meetings were interrupted by persecutions, continuance of which caused a number of the Separatists (by which they became known), to agitate in 1607 an emigration to Holland. Brewster being under the ban of the Church, became a member of a party which unsuccessfully tried to sail from Boston in Lincolnshire, England, and was arrested and imprisoned. He was in possession of considerable property at this time, a large part of which was spent to regain his liberty and in assisting the poorer members of the party to escape to Holland.

At the time of the departure of the Pilgrims for their future home



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

in a new land, on account of his popularity he was chosen their spiritual guide. He embarked on the *Mayflower* with his wife, Mary Love, and Wrestling and Love, sons, the latter an infant in arms. On arrival on the bleak coast of Massachusetts, the famous Covenant establishing the Pilgrim Republic was drafted, and Brewster is credited as being its author. For the first nine years of the Plymouth settlement he supplied the vacant pulpit, preaching impressive sermons; though often urged, he never administered the sacrament.

Elder Brewster, as a patriarch of a new religion in a new country, stands at the doorsteps of a great nation as a monument never to be erased from American history. Three centuries have rolled away since by his guiding hand and spirit the foundations were laid for a prosperous nation, that today takes her place in the galaxy of countries as a dictator with the power to proclaim universal democracy to the world at large.

What Brewster was to the religious government of the colony, William Bradford was to the civil government. He was born in 1588, at Austerfield, Yorkshire, a village of a population of three hundred, mostly belonging to the yeoman class, and one mile from Bawtry, England. He was seriously and religiously inclined from his childhood, and though he had little schooling, by diligent study he became proficient in Dutch, Latin, French and Greek; he even studied Hebrew, so that he could read the Bible in its original form. He early became interested in the religion of Separatists, thereby drawing upon himself the hostility and contempt of his relatives and neighbors; this naturally led him to become a member of the church at Scrooby that met in the Manor House where Brewster resided. At the time of the emigration of the members of that church to Holland he became an ardent supporter of the pilgrimage.

After suffering several months confinement in prison for his attempt to emigrate to Holland, he escaped in the spring of 1608 and joined his companions at Amsterdam, where he apprenticed himself to a French Protestant to learn the trade of silk-weaver.

At the time of the agitation of the Pilgrims' emigration to America, he was one of its firmest supporters. At Governor Carver's death he was elected governor of the colony, and was continued by annual elections except in 1633-1638 inclusive, and in 1644 until his



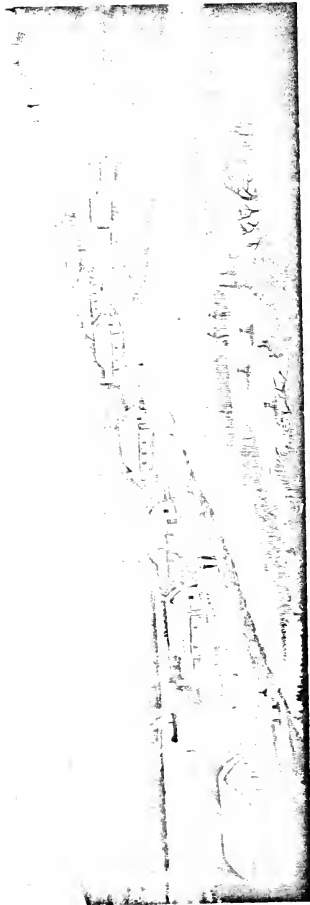
death. His authority was restricted at his own request in 1624, by a council of five, which in 1636 was increased to seven members. In the council he had a double vote. Bradford's friendly relations with the Indians, which he maintained through his understanding of the native character and his combination of firmness and energy with patience and gentleness, was the reason of their friendly sympathy, and which was vital to the continued existence of the colony. During the famine of 1622 he made several excursions amongst the savage procuring corn and beans.

Governor Bradford possessed a higher degree of literary culture than was usual among persons similarly circumstanced. He was read on history and philosophy, and much of his leisure time was spent in literary composition. His only production published during his lifetime was "A Diary of Occurrences," covering the first year of the colony, written in conjunction with Edward Winslow (London, 1622). He left several manuscript books in prose and poetry. The most valuable of his writings was a "History of the Plymouth Plantation," being a history of the society from its inception in 1620, and its history in Plymouth down to 1647. This manuscript became lost during the Revolution, but in 1854 was found complete at the Fulham library in England, and was in 1856 published by the Massachusetts Historical Society. The original manuscript is preserved in the State Library of Massachusetts.

Governor Bradford died at Plymouth, May 9, 1657. In an estimate of the character of Governor Bradford, his deep religious principles, his utmost fairness in his dealings not only with his fellow Pilgrims but with the native aborigines, stand forth as sterling qualities in his life. A man not physically strong, he battled with the adversities and hardships of pioneer life with cheerfulness, and with always a helping hand to his brethren in their misfortunes and distress. The student of history is under many obligations to him for his chronological narrative of the facts and events of the Plymouth colony. This with his manuscript works, shows his energetic will power; devoid of any collegiate education, by purely physical and mental force he overcame the lack of education in his early life.

Edward Winslow, born in Worcestershire, England, October 18, 1595, had charge of the commercial transactions of the colony. He negotiated the first treaty with the Indians and won their respect and affection, curing Massasoit of an illness. The treaty then made





STORE HOUSE.

P. BROWN

J. GOODMAN

W. BREWSTER

J. BILLINGTON

F. COOKE

E. WINSLOW

GOV<sup>RS</sup> BRADFORD

OLD FORT

PLYMOUTH IN 1622





remained intact until it was broken by King Philip in 1675. Winslow conducted the first embassy to the Indians, which was also the first attempt of the English to explore the interior. He sailed for England in September, 1623, and prepared for publication his "Good Newes from New England," which was the means of drawing attention to the colony. On his return to Plymouth in the spring of 1624, he imported the first neat-cattle into New England. At the election in that year he was chosen assistant governor, in which office he was continued until 1647, excepting 1633, 1636 and 1644, when he was chosen governor. The Adventurers in London sent John Lyford, a preacher, to Plymouth, who wrote letters full of slander and falsehoods to the people in England. Winslow in the summer of 1624 again sailed for England to refute these charges, and returned with evidence that banished Lyford from the colony.

While Winslow was governor, the Court of Associates enacted the elaborate code of laws and statutes that placed the government on a stable foundation. In the establishment of the United Colonies of New England he was a commissioner from his colony. His book, "Hypocrisie Unmasked," was a complete vindication of the accusations of religious intolerance that was brought against the colonists by Samuel Gorton and others of England.

Winslow advocated the civilization and conversion of the Indians, and published an address to Parliament upon the subject; and by his influence an act was passed incorporating the Society for Propagating the Gospel in New England. The society was under the direction of the Church of England, and still exists. Governor Winslow in the middle of the seventeenth century returned to England. He was appointed by the government, in 1654, to adjust the claims against Denmark for losses to English shipping. When Cromwell planned an expedition against the Spaniards in the West Indies, he appointed Winslow head commissioner. The army was defeated at San Domingo, and the fleet sailed for Jamaica, but on the passage Governor Winslow died on May 8, 1655, and was buried at sea. The only authentic portrait of any of the Pilgrim fathers is the one of Governor Winslow painted in London in 1651, and now preserved at Plymouth, Massachusetts.

The militant character of the colony was Myles Standish. During the war between Spain and Holland he was a soldier in the service of the latter country. Afterward he joined in Leyden the Pil-



grim emigration to America, more likely in a spirit of adventure than through any religious enthusiasm. He was not a member of Robinson's church, nor did he become a member of the Plymouth Communion. He was a dissenter from the dissenters. His military knowledge was of value to the colonists, and on their second exploration in search of a suitable place to land, he commanded sixteen armed men, each with his musket, sword and corslet.

After the founding of Plymouth, he was appointed military commander of the colony. In the fall of that year he undertook an expedition to explore Massachusetts Bay. They also explored the broad plains known as "Massachusetts fields," the gathering place of the Indian tribes, which comprises a part of what is now Quincy, Massachusetts.

The new colony at Weymouth, Massachusetts, planted in 1622, incurred the enmity of the Massachusetts Indians and a plot was formed by them to destroy it. The plan was revealed to the Plymouth Colony by Massasoit, and Standish with a force of men was ordered to their aid. Arriving at the colony, two of the Massachusetts Indian chiefs, Pecksuot and Wituwamat, with a half brother of the latter, were enticed into a room and by Massasoit's advice the Indians were killed by Standish and his men. This was the first Indian blood shed by the Pilgrims; a general battle ensued, and the Indians were defeated, though there were no lives lost. This victory of Standish spread terror among the savages; the head of Wituwamat was exposed to view at Plymouth as a warning to deter the Indians from further depredations.

Captain Standish was the military commander of the colony during his lifetime. He commanded the Plymouth troops in their expedition against the Narragansett Indians in 1643, and ten years later, when there was danger of hostilities with the Dutch, he was one of the council of war and was appointed to the command of the troops. His wife Rose, who accompanied him on the *Mayflower's* voyage, died January 29, 1621. His courtship of Priscilla Mullins has been made a subject of romance by the poet, Henry W. Longfellow. Although his envoy, John Alden, won his chosen bride, there does not seem to have been any illwill created between them, as they remained close friends until death, and later generations of Standish and Alden families intermarried. He married for his second wife, Barbara; a tradition says she was a sister of his first wife.



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

She came to the colony on the ship *Ann* in 1623, and was the mother of all his children.

Captain Standish was prominent in the civil affairs of the colony. He was for many years assistant on one of the governor's council. He was a commissioner of the United Colonies; a partner in the trading company; and for many years treasurer of the colony. He, with a number of the other colonists, removed from Plymouth and founded a town to which was given the name of Duxbury, in honor of Duxbury Hall, in his native parish in England. Here he lived the remainder of his life, and the site where he built his house became known as Captain's Hill, a name it bears to the present time; here he died October 3, 1656. A granite monument to his memory was erected on this hill in 1888, the shaft is one hundred feet in height, and upon it stands a statue of Standish looking eastward; his right hand, holding a copy of the charter of the colony, is extended toward Plymouth, while his left hand rests upon his sheathed sword.

Captain Standish was of small stature, of great energy, activity, and courage. He was able to impress the hostile Indians with awe for the English. He was "an iron-nerved Puritan, who could hew down forests and live on crumbs." He was resolute, stern, bold, and of incorruptible integrity. There was found in 1877 in a picture shop in Boston a portrait painted on a panel, bearing the date 1625, on which the name of M. Standish was discovered after removing the frame. This picture now hangs in Pilgrim Hall, Plymouth; also one of his swords and several other relics are in the possession of the society. Another sword is preserved in a cabinet of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

The picturesque hero in both romantic verse and history of the Pilgrim Fathers, John Alden, was born in England, in 1599. Alden was never a member of the Leyden Colony, but joined the Pilgrims on the *Mayflower* at Southampton. He was hired as a cooper, and on reaching the American coast he signed the Covenant in the cabin of the *Mayflower*, and became a member of the Church. Longfellow, in his "Courtship of Myles Standish," delineates his wooing by proxy, for the military hero, Captain Myles Standish, of the coy and winsome Puritan maiden, Priscilla Mullins. The manly and youthful beauty of the advocate surpassed in her eyes the mighty warlike exploits of the doughty captain, and she manifested her



choice to the aspiring orator of love, and he readily seized the opportunity and became the successful claimant for her hand in marriage. The marriage took place in the spring of 1621, and they lived long and happily together, and she bore him a family of eleven children.

Alden was elected in 1633 assistant to the governor, an office which he held for nearly all of the remainder of his life, serving with Edward Winslow, Josiah Winslow, Bradford, Prince and Hinckley. From 1666 until his death he held the office of first assistant, often called deputy governor, and was many times acting governor in the absence of the chief magistrate. On the Alden farm in Duxbury, Massachusetts, his son Jonathan built a house which has been occupied by eight generations in a direct line. It is the oldest house in New England, with three exceptions—the old fort at Medford, built in 1634; the Fairbanks house at Dedham, built in 1636; and the old stonehouse at Milford, Connecticut, built in 1640. Here Alden spent his declining years. He died in Duxbury, Massachusetts, September 1, 1686, aged eighty-seven years, the last of the famous band of Pilgrim Fathers that signed the compact in the cabin of the *Mayflower*.

\* \* \* \* \*

In the first century of the settlement of New England, the clergy, besides being the spiritual guides, were prominently connected with the temporal government of the colonies. In England they had been ejected from the Established Church for nonconformity, and, gathering their flocks around them, like the Israelites of old, they migrated to a new world to be free from religious persecutions and to obtain freedom of voice and action in a new land.

Among the pioneers of the clergy in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, was Francis Higginson. He was of English parentage, born in 1587. He was educated at Cambridge University, became rector of a parish in Leicestershire, was deprived of his benefice for nonconformity and was employed among his former parishioners as a lecturer. While so engaged he was apprehensive of receiving a summons to appear before the High Commission Court, and readily accepted an invitation from Massachusetts to proceed to their colony. He embarked in May, 1629, and arrived at Salem, Massachusetts, on June 29 that year. A congregation was established at Salem, of which he was chosen teacher; Samuel Skelton, his companion on the voyage, was pastor. They consecrated each other





by the laying on of hands, assisted by several of the gravest men. Subsequently Higginson drew up "a confession of faith and church covenant according to Scriptures," which was assented to by thirty persons who associated themselves as a church. He continued to discharge the duties of his office, when he was attacked by a hectic fever of which he ultimately died, August 6, 1630. He wrote "New England's Plantations, or a short and true description of the Commodities and Discommodities of the Country," London, 1630, and an account of his voyage, which is preserved in Hutchinson's collection of papers.

John Cotton, called the Patriarch of New England, was born in Derby, England, December 4, 1585. At the age of thirteen he entered Trinity College, and was afterwards a fellow of Emmanuel College, employed as a lecturer and tutor. He became vicar of St. Botolph's Church in Boston, Lincolnshire, in 1612, where he remained twenty years, noted as a preacher and controversialist, and inclining in his doctrine and practice toward the Puritan worship. He was informed against for not kneeling at sacrament, and cited to appear before Archbishop Laud in the High Commission Court. He sought safety in flight, and after spending some time in London he went to America, arriving at Boston, September 4, 1633. The following October he was ordained on a day of fasting, by imposition of hands, teacher of the church in Boston, and a colleague of Mr. Wilson, the pastor. Here he found his life's work, and in this connection he remained until his death, December 23, 1652, which was brought on by exposure in crossing the ferry to Cambridge, where he was going to preach.

Cotton was a critic in Greek, wrote Latin with elegance, and could discourse in Hebrew. He spent twelve hours in reading, his favorite author being John Calvin. His pulpit eloquence was famous for its simplicity and plainness, and his discourses were exceedingly effectual in exciting attention to religion. He was very regular in religious observances, and through his custom of keeping the Sabbath holy from evening to evening, that form of observance became universal throughout New England. Among his numerous works the most important are those published in the course of his controversy with Roger Williams, "Milk for Babes," a religious book for children, and "The Power of the Keys," on the nature of church government. He defended the interference of the civil power in



religious matters for the support of the truth, maintaining the duty, for the good of the church and of the people, of putting away those who, after repeated admonitions, persist in rejecting fundamental power of doctrine or worship.

The founder of the Colony of Connecticut, Thomas Hooker, was born in Markfield, Leicestershire, England, in 1586. He is supposed to have been a cousin of the noted divine, Richard Hooker, author of the great work, "Ecclesiastical Polity." Hooker, after graduating from Emmanuel College, Cambridge, took orders, preached in London, and in 1626 was chosen lecturer at Chelmsford. Having been silenced for nonconformity by Archbishop Laud, he established a grammar school at Chelmsford, in which John Eliot was usher. The persecution continuing, he emigrated to Holland, where he preached at Delft and Rotterdam as an assistant to Doctor Ames, who said to him, "he never met with his equal, either in preaching or in disputation." He came to New England with John Cotton in 1633, and was settled at Newtown (now Cambridge) being ordained by the brethren of the church. The settlements in Massachusetts becoming too congested, with a jealousy arising amongst the clergy owing to their close proximity to each other, led Hooker and his associate Stone, with about one hundred of their flock, in 1636, to seek a new home. This resulted in the formation of the settlement at Hartford, Connecticut, where Hooker and Stone were the first ministers of the church. He died in Hartford, Connecticut, July 7, 1647.

Another pioneer founder of Connecticut was John Davenport, born at Coventry, England, in 1598. He was educated at Oxford University, and became an eminent preacher among the Puritans, and minister of St. Stephen's Church, London. He became engaged in 1630 in purchasing church lands of laymen for the benefit of poor congregations; he was making great progress when he was interrupted by Archbishop Laud, who feared it would turn to the profit of the nonconformists.

Davenport himself soon became a nonconformist, and resigning his charge, in 1633 went to Holland. There he became involved in a controversy, taking sides against a general baptism of children, and returned to London in two years. He had been interested in the Massachusetts Colony, and seeing a letter from Mr. Cotton giving a favorable account of it, he determined to emigrate, and



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

arrived in Boston, June 26, 1637. On his arrival he received an invitation to sit in a session of a synod, and, owing to the sharp religious controversies of Massachusetts, he determined with a company of settlers to sail on March 30, 1638, to Quinnipiack, to found a new colony which was named New Haven. The first Sabbath after arrival he preached under a spreading oak. He was minister at New Haven for thirty years, and was active in the organization of the civil government. The Bible was made the basis of civil law, and as trial by jury is not mentioned in the Bible, no place was given it in the colony. The constituted assembly held in a barn, June 4, 1639, resolved that church members only should be burgesses. The carefulness of Davenport in regard to the admission of members to the church, gave him also the keys of political power. His reputation abroad was such that he was invited to sit with the Westminster Assembly of divines, but he could not be spared from his church.

The regicides, Goffe and Whalley, while flying from pursuit, hid in his home, and he exhorted his people not to betray them. A sharp discussion arose in New England in regard to the general baptism of children; Davenport took the same ground he had taken in Amsterdam. He was called to Boston, December 9, 1668; some who disapproved of his controversial position left the church when he took charge and formed a congregation that afterwards was known as the Old South Church. He died at Boston, Massachusetts, March 15, 1670.

The "Apostle of the Indians," John Eliot, born at Nasing, County Essex, England, in 1604, was educated at Jesus College, Cambridge University, where he took his bachelor's degree in 1623. He there displayed a partiality for philology, which may have had some influence in stimulating the zeal he afterwards displayed in acquiring the language of the native Indians. After leaving the university he was employed as an usher in a school near Chelmsford, under the Rev. Thomas Hooker. While in the family of this reverend gentleman he received serious impressions, and resolved to devote himself to the work of the Christian ministry. As there was no field for nonconformist preachers in England, he resolved to emigrate to America, and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, November 3, 1631. After officiating for a year in the first church in Boston, he was in November, 1632, appointed pastor of the church in Roxbury, where he continued until his death, May 20, 1690.



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

When Eliot began his mission work there were about twenty tribes within the bounds of the plantation of Massachusetts, and he was assiduously employed for a long time in learning their languages. With the assistance of a young Indian taken as prisoner, he translated the Lord's Prayer and many Scripture texts, and was able on October 28, 1646, to preach to the Indians in their own language. This meeting was held at Nonantum, now a part of Newton, and Eliot was strongly opposed by the sachems and conjurers, who threatened him with violence if he did not desist from his labors; but his answer was: "I am about the work of the Great God, and he is with me, so I neither fear you nor all the sachems in the country. I will go on; do you touch me if you dare."

Mainly through the instrumentality of Eliot, Natick or "Place of Hills," was founded by Christian Indians, for whom he drew up a set of civil and economical regulations. He also in 1653 published a catechism for their use, the first work published in the Indian language; no copy is known to exist. Eliot was an extensive traveler, planted a number of churches, visited all the Indians in Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies; he induced large bodies of Indians to give up their savage customs and form themselves into civilized communities, led many persons to engage in missionary work among them, twenty-four of whom became preachers to their own tribes.

The founder of Rhode Island, Roger Williams, the son of William Williams, was baptized at Gwinsea, Cornwall, Wales, July 24, 1600. In early life he went to London, where his skill as a reporter commended him to the notice of Sir Edward Coke, who sent him to Sutton's Hospital (Charter House School). He was admitted to Pembroke College, January 29, 1623, and a matriculated pensioner, July 7, 1625. He took the degree of B. A. in January, 1627. There is a tradition he studied law; but, if so, it could only have been for a short time; for it is certain that he had been a clergyman of the Church of England when at the close of 1630 he embarked for America, arriving at Boston, Massachusetts, February 3, 1631.

Williams was a Puritan of the extreme wing, and of that section of the wing where tendencies toward the views of the Baptists were the immediate occasion of the rapid rise of that denomination in England. On his arrival at Boston he incurred the hostility of the authorities, chiefly by denying that the magistrates had right to punish for any but civil offences. He removed to Salem, Massa-





## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

chusetts, to become the assistant of Parson Skelton; the General Court remonstrated against his settlement there and complained that he had refused "to join with the congregation at Boston because they would not make a public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England, while they lived there;" and besides, that he "had declared his opinion that a magistrate might not punish a breach of the Sabbath, nor any other offence, as it was a breach of the first table."

Persecution obliged him after a brief ministry at Salem to retire to Plymouth, where for two years he was assistant of Pastor Ralph Smith. Here he formed acquaintance with leading Indian chiefs and gained a knowledge of their language. He was invited to return to Salem, first as an assistant and afterwards as the successor of Parson Skelton. In one year's time he filled that place with principles of Separatism tending to Anabaptism. The General Court, in the autumn of 1635, banished him from the colony, ordering him to depart in six weeks, because he had called in question the authority of magistrates in respect to two things: one, relating to the right of the King to appropriate and grant lands of the Indians without purchase; and the other, to the right of civil power to impose faith and worship. On the first of these points, Williams made explanation deemed satisfactory; on the other, the divergences were hopeless, the ministers who gave their advice at the request of the court, declaring that opinions which would not allow the magistrate to intermeddle, even to restrain a church from heresy or apostasy, were not to be endured; and he, on the other hand, maintaining with inflexible rigor the absolute and eternal distinction between the spheres of the civil government and the Christian church. In defense of his views he published a pamphlet entitled, "Mr. Cotton's Letter Examined and Answered."

The period of his departure was extended to the coming spring; but his doctrines were spreading and his purpose of founding a colony embodying his principles becoming known, it was determined to send him to England. Williams was forewarned, and abandoning his friends and family in midwinter, he went through the wilderness to the country of the Narragansetts. He purchased land of the Indians, and after planting his own corn found that it was within the bounds of the Plymouth Colony. With five companions in a canoe he started on a new exploration, and finally landed and called



the place Providence. Here was established a true democracy; and persons admitted to the corporation were required to sign the following: "We whose names are hereunder, desirous to inhabit in the town of Providence, do promise to subject ourselves, in active or passive obedience, to all such orders or agreements as shall be made for public good of the body, in an orderly way, by the major consent of the present inhabitants, master of families, incorporated together in a town of fellowship, and others whom they shall admit into the same, only in civil things."

The history of Roger Williams for the succeeding half century is the history of Providence and of Rhode Island. The colony was for some years a pure democracy, transacting its public business in town meetings. As Massachusetts began to claim jurisdiction of Massachusetts Bay, Williams in 1643 was sent to England to procure a charter. He obtained an independent charter, March 14, 1644, and in 1649 he was chosen deputy president. He again visited England in 1651 to obtain a more explicit charter, and remained there until 1654, enjoying the friendship of Milton, Cromwell, and other prominent Puritans. On his return to Rhode Island in 1654 he was chosen president or governor of the province, and remained in office until 1658.

Williams' writings were numerous, mostly on religious subjects. He was a proficient scholar in Greek, Latin, French, Dutch, and Hebrew. He refused to persecute the Quakers, and his influence with the Indians enabled him to render signal services to the colonies around him by averting from them the calamities of savage warfare; but they refused to admit Rhode Island into the New England league, and even put obstacles in the way of her procuring the means of defense. He died in 1683, in his eighty-fourth year, and was buried in his family burying ground in Providence, near the spot where he landed.

The first governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony, John Endicott, was born in Dorchester, England, in 1589. He was sent out by the Massachusetts Company to carry on the plantation at Naumkeag or Salem, where he arrived September 6, 1628. The following April he was chosen governor of the "London Plantation," but in August of the same year, on the determination to transfer the government and charter to New England, he was relinquished of his office. With Captain John Underhill, Endicott conducted a sangui-





*Jo: Winthrop*



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

nary but ineffectual expedition in 1635 against the Block Island and Pequot Indians.

Endicott was deputy governor of the Massachusetts Colony from 1641 to 1644 and 1650 and 1654; and was governor in 1644 and 1649, from 1651 to 1654, and 1655 to 1665. He was bold and energetic, a sincere and zealous Puritan, rigid in his principles, and severe in the execution of the laws against those who differed from the religion of the colony. So adverse was he to anything savoring of popery that he cut out the cross from the military standard. He was opposed to long hair, insisted that women should wear veils in public assemblies, and did all in his power to establish what he deemed a pure church. During his administration as governor, four Quakers were put to death in Boston. He died in Boston, Massachusetts, March 15, 1665.

The Winthrops, father and son, have been justly looked upon as the flower of American Puritanism. The elder John Winthrop was born at Groton, County Suffolk, England, January 12, 1588. He graduated at Trinity College in 1605, and was bred to the law. He was a man of substance and education, and in religious belief became a Puritan. He was made in 1629 governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and the next year he headed the great emigration to Massachusetts, and was selected governor. The expedition sailed from Yarmouth, England, April 7, 1630, and first landed in Salem, Massachusetts, but it being sickly there, they went to the peninsula of Shawmut, where there was a spring of pure and wholesome water, and seated themselves, and called that place Trimountain, on account of three hills. It was afterwards named Boston, and became the principal city of New England.

Winthrop was re-elected governor until 1634, when Sir Henry Vane became governor, and he served as deputy-governor. The following year occurred the celebrated controversy in regard to Mrs. Hutchinson and her doctrines. Vane and Winthrop were on opposite sides, and in the election of 1637 the latter was chosen governor. He was elected every year till 1640, and again in 1642 and 1643. He was deputy-governor in 1644 and 1645, and again governor in 1646 until his death, March 26, 1649. The tenderness and gentleness of Winthrop's nature was beyond dispute; even such political opponents as Vane retained their personal friendship for him. These qualities, however, were supplemented by a decided





antipathy to democracy in every form, which made him the best civil leader for the supporters of the ecclesiastical system of Massachusetts.

The younger John Winthrop was born at Groton, England, February 12, 1606. He graduated at Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland; studied law at the Inner Temple, London; and then traveled on the continent. He was a member of the expedition of 1627 for the relief of the Huguenots at La Rochelle, France. He was attached to the English Embassy at Constantinople, Turkey, in 1628, and followed his father to America in 1631, and was chosen a magistrate of Massachusetts in 1633, but returned to England. He returned to America in 1635 with a commission from Lord Say and Seal to build a fort at the mouth of the Connecticut river, and of which plantation he was constituted governor. He obtained in 1645 title to lands in southeastern Connecticut, and founded the present city of New London, Connecticut. He became a magistrate of Connecticut in 1651, and was elected in 1657 governor, and was re-elected annually until his death, while attending the Congress of the New England Confederacy at Boston, Massachusetts, April 5, 1676.

The first American born governor of Massachusetts was William Phips, the son of John Phips, a gunsmith by trade, who emigrated from Bristol, England. He had a family of twenty-six children, of whom William, one of the youngest of the family, was born at Woolwich, Maine, February 2, 1651.

The death of his father left him at an early age to the exclusive management of his mother. The lowness of his parents' situation and the ravages of frontier hardships did not admit of much opportunity for obtaining an education. At the age of eighteen years we find him tending sheep, but a sailor's life appealed to his active temperament. Unable to procure a situation on board a vessel, he became a ship carpenter, which work was diversified by occasional coasting trips. Here he remained for four years, but dreaming he was born for greater matters, he removed to Boston in 1673. Here he worked at his trade for a year, and married a widow several years his senior, a daughter of Captain Roger Spencer. His wife brought him some pecuniary means that enabled him to contract with merchants at Boston to build a vessel which was launched on Sheepshead river, a little to the eastward of the Kennebec river.

When in the summer of 1689, an Indian war was raging on



the frontier, he offered his services to Governor Bradford. In the winter of 1690 he was placed in command of an expedition against Nova Scotia and L'Acadie. Port Royal was captured and he took possession of the country from Port Royal to the Penobscot river in the name of the English government. On his return from Port Royal, Sir William took his seat in the Board of Assistants, to which he had been elected two days before. A naval expedition against Quebec was undertaken in 1690, Sir William being appointed commander-in-chief. The fleet sailed August 9, 1690; smallpox broke out amongst the crew, unnecessary delays were encountered, and it was not until October 5 that the expedition appeared before Quebec. After several attempts to make a landing, cold weather compelled the return of the fleet. One vessel was never heard of, another was wrecked, and a third, a fire ship, was burned at sea.

In September, 1691, Increase Mather obtained a new charter for Massachusetts. Under this charter he had the power to appoint a governor, and the fact that Sir William Phips was a native of New England, possessed a high rank and considerable estate, had already served the Crown in several capacities and obtained the favor of the King without forfeiting his popularity at home, picked him out as the most logical and eligible person for the office. He was therefore nominated at the Council Board and was appointed Captain-general and Governor-in-chief of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England. Sir William was in England at the time of his appointment, and on his return to Boston the witchcraft persecutions were at their height; his last act as governor was to issue a general pardon to all those who had been convicted or accused of the offense. At the opening of 1693, the people grew dissatisfied with Phips' administration. The King ordered him to England to defend himself against the attacks of his enemies. He was deprived of his office by the King and, unable to remain idle, Sir William engaged in the prosecution of two designs—to supply the English navy with lumber and naval stores from the eastern part of New England; the other, returning to his old business of seeking for shipwrecked treasure. The execution of these designs was cut short. About the middle of February he was attacked with a cold, which resulted in a malignant fever which caused his death on February 18, 1695, in the forty-fifth year of his age. He was interred in the Church of St. Mary, Woolnoth, England. He left no children.



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

The first governor of New Haven Colony was Theophilus Eaton. He was born in Stony Stratford, Oxfordshire, England, about 1591. His father was a clergyman, and it was the hope of his friends that he would study theology, but he became a merchant in London. Here he arose to opulence, and attracted the notice of the government and was sent on a diplomatic mission to the court of Denmark, and on his return to London again engaged in mercantile life, gaining high reputation.

Eaton was one of the seven pillars that formed a government for the colony, was chosen the first governor and continued in that office until his death, January 7, 1658. He was one of the commissioners that formed the United Colonies of New England, and in 1646 proposed to Governor Kieft, of the province of New Amsterdam, to settle all differences with him by arbitration; the Dutch governor soon after this was displaced by Peter Stuyvesant, and nothing came of his suggestion.

William Pynchon, born in Springfield, County Essex, England, in 1590, was scion of an ancient family, and well educated. In the charter of the Colony of Massachusetts granted by Charles I, he is named as a patentee. He came to America with Governor Winthrop in 1630, and was one of the first settlers of Roxbury, Massachusetts. Being a man of means, he engaged in the fur trade with the Indians and was made treasurer of the colony.

Pynchon with seven others from Roxbury joined Rev. Thomas Hooker's party and, proceeding westward, on arriving at what is now Springfield, Massachusetts, selected a beautiful site and remained there. This settlement was first called Agawam, but the name was changed in 1640 to Springfield, in honor of Pynchon's birthplace. The town remained under the jurisdiction of Connecticut until 1641, when it was recognized by the Massachusetts authorities as falling within their bounds. Pynchon in 1643 became one of the Board of Assistants of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He had the office of chief magistrate until 1651. He succeeded in preserving friendly relations between the Indians and his colony, by a conciliatory policy. He treated them independently as far as their relations with one another were concerned. The Indians had confidence in him and were ready to be guided by his wishes.

On the assembling of the Massachusetts General Court in October, 1650, they were horrified at the sight of a book lately published in





William Pynchon





## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

London, England, the author being William Pynchon, entitled, "The Meritorious Price of Our Redemption, Justification, etc., Clearing it from some Errors." The work maintained: 1. "That Christ did not suffer for us those unutterable torments of God's wrath that was commonly called hell-torments. 2. That Christ did not bear our sins by God's imputation, and therefore he did not bear the curse of the law for them. 3. That Christ had redeemed us from the curse of the law not by suffering the said curse for us," etc. This opposed the Calvinistic view of the atonement, and created a great excitement in Boston. The General Court pronounced the book heretical, and directed that it "be burned by the executioner in the market place in Boston on the morrow immediately after the lecture." Pynchon was called to appear before a tribunal of ministers, but his recantation of his errors was not satisfactory. Cited again before the court, he did not appear; he was enjoined to be present at the next session of the General Court under a penalty of one hundred pounds. In consequence of this violent action of the authorities and the ill-treatment to which he had been subjected, he decided to return to England in September, 1652, leaving his children in New England, as permanent settlers.

\* \* \* \* \*

The triumvirate of the revolutionists of New England were Samuel Adams, James Otis and John Hancock. They were a foundation of a new New England conscience which fostered a condition of betterment of life and type of character. The old New England conscience, strengthened by a fight against the wilderness, proscribed from contact with it all idleness, ungodliness, and frivolity. It was narrow as avarice, morbid as egotism. It exalted harsh unlovely deeds into heaven inspired acts, and was blind to all human purposes but death. Their spiritual life was a ceaseless ceremonial, their pious observances were rigid rules of etiquette, without which one could obtain neither favor nor even audience of the Almighty. The spirit of caste kept our ancestors "not provincial, but parochial." It performed its work soundly, peopled an exceptional region, and therefore has no necessity of being. The modern type of conscience has developed new concepts of religion, and has emancipated New England from that reign of selfish individualism which sought only its own salvation. The modern conscience is straightforward and business-like, and the highest civil-



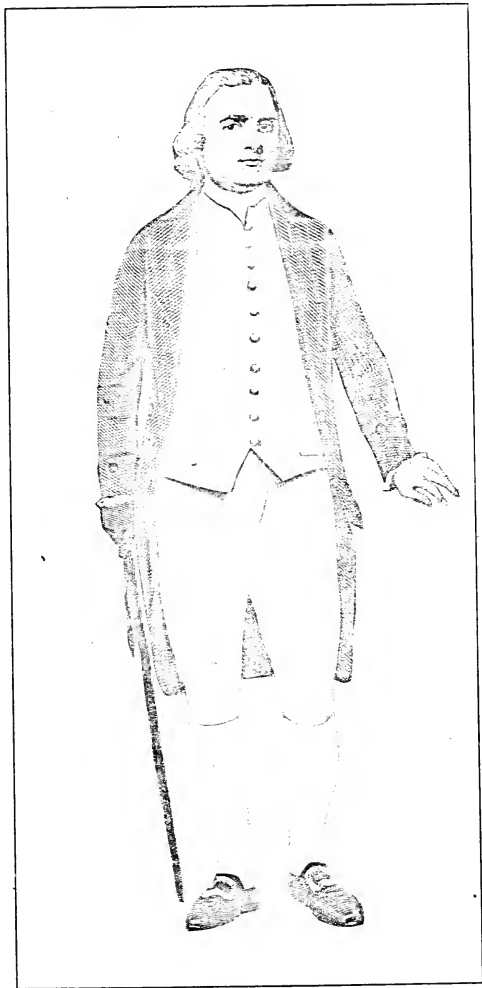
ization is synonymous with the purest simplicity. The new conscience, if it is to do great deeds, must meet the complex problems of the twentieth, with the single-heartedness of the eighteenth century.

Samuel Adams has been properly called "The New England Democrat." The historian John Fiske says that Adams should stand second only to Washington as the greatest of Americans. He led the movement against the arbitrary rule of Great Britain, and stirred up Massachusetts and the other colonies to resist taxation. It was not by eloquence and fiery speech-making—for he was no orator, but by letters to newspapers; by correspondence, voluminous and fiery; most of all by resolutions passed in the greatest political institution, the New England town-meeting. It was in the old town of Boston, in the town-meetings where everybody felt free to speak, that Samuel Adams played his great part as an advocate of the people's rights and a leader of the Revolution.

Samuel Adams was born in Boston, Massachusetts, September 27, 1722. He was prepared for college at the Boston Latin School. After receiving private tuition, in 1736 he entered Harvard College; he was graduated as A. B. in 1740. His father, Captain Samuel Adams, urged his entering the ministry, but the son having no taste for the calling, began the study of law. This afterwards he relinquished and accepted employment in the counting house of Thomas Cushing, where though active and industrious enough, he displayed conspicuous inaptitude for trade. Subsequently he began trade for himself but was unsuccessful, and he then became a partner with his father in a brewery.

Not succeeding in business, Adams obtained the post of tax collector for the town of Boston. This brought him into contact and acquaintance with all the inhabitants and gained him the cognomen from his political opponents of "Samuel the Publican." He was a member of the Caucus Club of Boston, which was a corruption probably of "Caulkers' Club," as it was originally composed of ship-building mechanics. This club, in which Adams was an active member, met and agreed on candidates they would support for town offices. Adams served on many town committees, as moderator of town meetings, but did not really become prominent in politics until he was forty-two years old. At that age men were considered venerable, and Adams moreover carried out that idea, as his hair





SAMUEL ADAMS



was quite gray and he had a trembling of the head and hands which, while it added impressiveness in his public speaking, made him seem much older than he was.

In 1764 he was elected one of the three representatives from Boston to the Provincial Assembly, a position which he held nine years. Upon his entry into the General Court he accepted the position of clerk, which enabled him to exercise a certain influence over the course of proceedings. It devolved upon him to prepare the largest portion of the papers of the house in its controversies with the royal governors Bradford and Hutchinson. This admirably fitted his fluent and eloquent pen and the mixture of his character of caution with fire, courage and decision. Adams is described at this time by one of his contemporaries as being zealous, ardent and keen in the cause; was always for softness, delicacy and prudence when they would do; but as staunch, stiff, strict, rigid and inflexible in the cause. Another says that he believed that Adams had a most thorough understanding of liberty and her resources; in the temper and character of the people, though not in the law and constitution, as well as the most habitual, radical love of it, also the most earnest, genteel and artful pen. He is described as a man of refined policy, steadfast integrity, exquisite humanity, fair erudition, and obliging and engaging manners, real as well as professed piety, and a universal good character. While Adams thus devoted himself to politics, it was chiefly the industry and economy of his wife that supported the family. He married, in 1749, Elizabeth, daughter of Reverend Samuel Checkley, of Boston. She died in 1767, and his second wife was Elizabeth Wells, a daughter of an English merchant who had settled in Boston in 1723.

Adams, though poor, was incorruptible; it was proposed to silence him by the gift of some place under the government, but the royal governor declared that he was of such an "obstinacy and inflexible disposition" that no gift or office would conciliate him.

Meanwhile the Stamp Act had been repealed. The people of Boston in 1769 devoted their time to abusing the importers of English goods, and the English soldiers. This culminated in the Boston Massacre. At a town meeting where there was some objection to a motion pending, that it savored of independence, Adams wound up a speech in defense of it with the bold declaration, "Independent we are, and independent we will be." After the Boston Massacre,





## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

he was appointed chairman of a committee to wait upon the governor and council to demand the withdrawal of the British troops from Boston. The energy of Adams prevailed, and the troops were sent to Castle Island.

Adams and Democracy had for the moment triumphed, but the next two years were years of reaction. New York, which had agreed on the non-importation of British goods, revoked this agreement; the King's government grew more and more determined; the Whigs of Boston became disconsolate, the Tories, jubilant. In this crisis, Adams conceived the idea of establishing a committee of correspondence to strengthen the cause of independence and to bring the force of all the Massachusetts town meetings to bear upon the somewhat wavering policies of the Boston town meeting. Most of his friends thought the plan absurd, but the response that came from the towns showed that he was right. This action of Massachusetts spread to other colonies; in 1773, Virginia proposed that there should be a committee of correspondence between all the colonies. These committees of correspondence were the germ of the Federal Union.

Together with John Adams, in 1780, he took an active part in the formation of the State Constitution of Massachusetts. He was an influential member of the Massachusetts Convention in 1788, called to ratify the Federal Constitution; though opposed to many of its features, he finally gave it his support. The following year he was chosen lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, which office he held until 1794, when he was elected governor. He was a warm admirer of the French Revolution, and in natural politics leaned decidedly to the Republican or Jeffersonian party. The Federal party being predominant in the State, also his increasing age and infirmities, induced him in 1797 to decline serving longer as governor and to retire to private life. He, however, remained a conspicuous figure until his death, October 2, 1803. His only son, Samuel, graduated from Harvard College in 1771, studied medicine with Dr. Joseph Warren, served as a surgeon throughout the Revolution, but his health was impaired during the war, and he died in 1788.

James Otis, the Patrick Henry of New England, was born at Great Marshes, now West Barnstable, Massachusetts, February 5, 1725. He graduated at Harvard College in 1743, studied law in Boston, and was admitted to practice in Plymouth in 1748. Two





JAMES OTIS



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

years later he removed to Boston, where he soon obtained a high rank as a lawyer and advocate at the bar. He married, in 1775, Miss Ruth Cunningham.

Fond of literary pursuits and a thorough classical scholar, he wrote and published "*Rudiments of Latin Prosody*." He entered public life as a zealous patriot and gifted orator. He appeared for the merchants as an attorney against the writs of assistance that had dealings with an illicit trade with the West Indies, and warrants were executed to search ships and dwellings for smuggled goods. The legality of the writs was questioned, and the advocate for the crown argued that as parliament was the supreme legislature for the whole British realm, no subject had the right to complain. To this James Otis answered with great power and effect. The fire of patriotism glowed in every sentence. "To my dying day, I will oppose, with all the power and faculties God has given me, all such instruments of slavery on one hand and of villainy on the other." He thus gave the keynote to the concerted action of the English American colonies, in opposing the obnoxious acts of the British Parliament. "Then," said John Adams, who heard Otis speak, "the independence of the colonists was proclaimed."

The people could not brook such a system of petty oppression. At a town meeting when this government measure was discussed by Mr. Gridley, the calm advocate of the crown, James Otis, one of Gridley's pupils, addressed the multitude. Referring to the arbitrary powers of the writs, he said, "A man's house is his castle; and while he is quiet, he is as well guarded as a prince in his castle. This writ, if it shall be declared legal, would totally annihilate this privilege. Custom house officers may enter our homes when they please; we are commanded to permit their entry. Their menial servants may enter, may break everything in their way; and whether they break through with malice or revenge, no man, no court, may inquire. I am determined to sacrifice estate, ease, health, applause, even life, to the sacred calls of my country, in opposition to a kind of power the exercise of which cost one King his head and another his throne." Though the judge secretly granted the writs at the next term of court, they were never executed. The next year Otis was elected a representative to the Massachusetts Assembly, where his eloquence soon placed him at the head of the popular party, and



justified his claim to the title of the "great incendiary of New England."

In 1764, he published a pamphlet entitled "The Rights of the Colonies Vindicated," which attracted great attention in England for its finished diction and its masterly arguments. He proposed in 1765 the congress of delegates to consider the Stamp Act. He was chosen a delegate and was one of the committee to prepare an address to the English House of Commons. A committee of correspondence was appointed to hold communications with other colonial assemblies, and the political postulate, "Taxation without representation is tyranny," was boldly enunciated in a pamphlet by James Otis, entitled "The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted."

Otis was chosen in May, 1767, speaker of the provincial house; the governor negatived the election, but he could not silence him. When the English ministry required the Massachusetts of Assembly to rescind the circular letter and requested the colonies to unite in measures for redress, Otis made a speech which his adversaries proclaimed as "the most violent, abusive and treasonable declaration that perhaps was ever uttered." The House refused to rescind by a vote of ninety-two to seventeen.

In the summer of 1769 he published an article in the "Boston Gazette" which greatly exasperated the custom house officers. The next evening he met Robinson, one of the officers; an altercation ensued in which Otis was overpowered by numbers and severely injured. He received a cut on the head, and his subsequent derangement is attributed to the wound. He obtained a verdict against the inflictor of the wound, but the amount of money he received for damages he returned on receiving a written apology. He withdrew in 1770 to the country on account of ill-health, but was called into public life as a representative the following year, but was unable to perform the duties. After the War of Independence which his trumpet voice had heralded, he attempted to resume the practice of his profession. His last two years were spent at Andover, Massachusetts; he had often expressed the wish that his death might be by a stroke of lightning. Standing in his doorway on May 23, 1783, during a thunder storm, he was instantly killed by a lightning-stroke.

The autocrat of the triumvirate was John Hancock, born in Quincy, Massachusetts, January 12, 1737. He received a college







JOHN HANCOCK



## BEGINNINGS OF NEW ENGLAND

education at Harvard, graduating in 1754. Shortly afterwards he entered the counting house of his uncle, Thomas Hancock, who was a prominent merchant of Boston. In 1764 occurred the death of his uncle, who left him a large fortune, and he soon became identified with the mercantile business of Boston.

Hancock was first chosen to the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1766. The seizure of his sloop, the *Liberty*, in 1768, occasioned a riot when the royal commissioners of customs narrowly escaped with their lives. After the Boston Massacre he was a member of the committee to demand of the governor the removal of the British troops from the city; and at the funeral of the slain he delivered an address so glowing and fearless in its reprobation of the conduct of the soldiery and their leaders, that it greatly offended the chief magistrate. Samuel Adams and Hancock were active in the Sons of Liberty, and were members of the Provincial Assembly in 1774, the latter being president. At the session held in Concord, Massachusetts, in April, 1775, one of the objects that led to the first battle of the Revolution was to seize these two noted patriots, who had tarried at Lexington, Massachusetts. They were, however, warned of the movement for their capture, and escaped in the night, followed by Dorothy Quincy, to whom Hancock was affianced, and whom he married in September, 1775. In a proclamation made by General Gage in June, 1775, he denounced those engaged in the Lexington affair as "rebels and parricides of the Constitution," and offered a free pardon to all who would return to their allegiance excepting Adams and Hancock, who were outlawed, and for whom he offered a reward as arch traitors.

Hancock was a delegate in the first Continental Congress and was chosen president of that body; he was the first to place his signature to the Declaration of Independence. Returning from Congress in 1777 on account of ill-health, he was in February, 1778, appointed first major-general of the Massachusetts militia, and took part in Sullivan's campaign in Rhode Island in the following August. He was a member of the convention for framing a constitution for the State of Massachusetts, and was in 1780 chosen first governor, to which office with an interval of two years, he was annually elected until his death at Quincy, Massachusetts, October 8, 1793. He was president of the State Convention that adopted the National Constitution.



# When and Where Some of the First Ships Were Built in New England

BY LUCY PORTER HIGGINS, BOSTON, MASS.



HE call for ships and yet more ships during the recent World War, awoke the long slumbering spirit of ship-building in old Massachusetts. The products of Fore River and Squantum—an ever-increasing wonder and astonishment—has left that spirit undisturbed, but the spirit and the genius of other days was roused by the World War from its long sleep. Wareham is now coming into line, and the vision of white sails and hulls of wood is already taking shape. A ten-acre lot has been secured in this quiet town, which is straightway to be a shipyard, where tugs, barges, and schooners up to 1,500 tons can be built, where five shipways can send their ships into a channel 62 feet deep at low water, and ever-increasing facilities will materialize. For more than half a century the building of wooden ships has been a romantic and fascinating dream of the past, now again becoming a reality in many places.\*

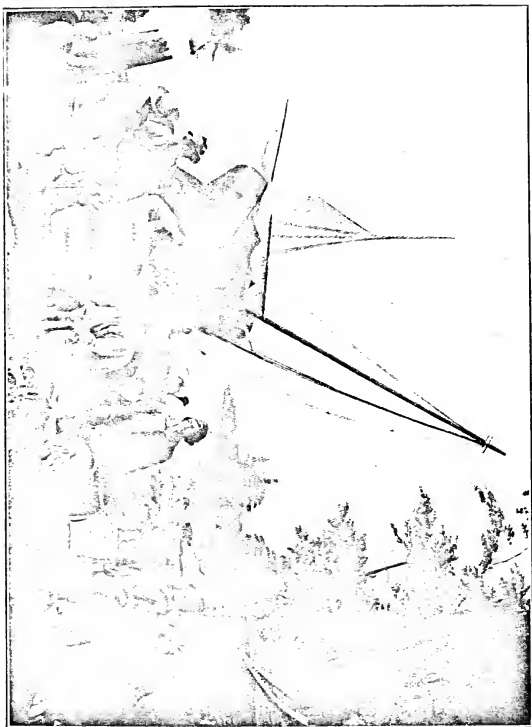
In old Duxbury (the first incorporated town of the State, that event occurring June 17, 1637) for nearly two hundred years the clink of heavy hammers echoed from early morning till dewy eve, as in her numerous shipyards the proud trees of the forest grew into new forms of beauty, and glided gracefully into the welcoming waves; but where the smooth green grass has been unruffled by a single ship for many a year.

We are told that the first vessel launched in Duxbury was a small sloop, or "pinnace," made of wild cherry, and built about the year 1700 by Thomas Prince, whose yard was on the western shore of the "nook," or "the Captain's nook," as it was then called; the

---

\*The frontispiece of this Magazine, and the plates accompanying this article, are from "History of New Bedford, Mass.," by Zephaniah W. Pease, of that city, (Lewis Historical Pub. Co., New York, 1918). They are after old-time paintings and engravings in the Bourne Whaling Museum, New Bedford, Mass.





From an Old Painting by William A. Wall





## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

"Captain" of course being Myles Standish, whose grant of land, several hundred acres, included the nook, and also Captain's Hill, now surmounted by the Standish Monument. On a knoll a little to the south and west of this hill, was his home. It overlooked the Plymouth settlement, and was surrounded and almost hidden by trees. Here he could guard both settlements from hostile Indians, a service which he most faithfully rendered. This house was burned not long before his death, and he spent the remainder of his days with his son Alexander, whose house was a little farther to the south and west, still standing and known as the Standish House. The little knoll has been a mecca to countless pilgrims, and many interesting souvenirs of the brave Captain have been taken from the spot. Though a digression, this statement of facts is not uninteresting.

In the early days, canoes were often used by the colonists, but other accommodations were much needed, and the building of this first little sloop was an important matter. Should it be a success, many more would follow. Skill was not wanting, but tools were scarce, and the enterprising builders were, perforce, compelled to resort to many substitutes for necessary materials. Some of the workmen had learned their trade in "Merrie England," now, alas, a dream. Others, whose wits were sharpened by necessities, lent welcome aid, while all who could spare time from other toils looked on, curious if not doubtful, and with ever-ready criticism. The master builder himself may have had misgivings, but at length the product of their labors is completed and waiting to be launched. Friends and neighbors gather to witness the triumph of skill and ingenuity over discouraging conditions. Having secured places of vantage on the side of the hill, and other outlooks through openings in the trees, they wait in eager expectation. And the boys—they are perched at the highest possible points, and now even they are still. A hush of expectation is in the air. A moment, and the tiny craft glides gracefully down into the blue waters of the bay; a glad shout goes up from the neighbors and friends and the boys, and a weight is lifted from the master builder's heart. We should be so glad to know the name of this first little boat, this leader in the van of a mighty and almost endless procession that was to follow.

But shipbuilding in Massachusetts had an earlier date than this. The first vessel built in Massachusetts colony was launched July



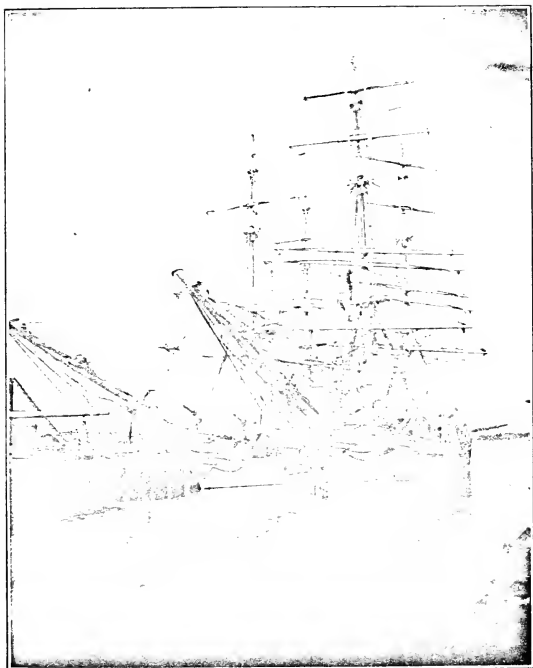
## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

4, 1631, into the "Mistick" river at Medford. This was a "bark," the *Blessing of the Bay*, of 30 tons, and owned by Governor Winthrop. Five years later, in 1636, she was valued at £160. A ship of 300 tons was launched at Salem in June, 1641. At Gloucester, a ship was built in 1643. In Scituate, at what became known as Hobart's Landing, as early as 1650, Thomas Nichols, shipwright, owned land and built ships. He was succeeded by his son-in-law, Samuel House, Jr., who married his daughter, Rebecca, in 1664. Jeremiah and Walter Hatch built at this landing at a later period. In 1676, Israel Hobart, son of the Rev. Peter Hobart, of Hingham, settled here; from him the landing took its name, and here he carried on the business for many years. James Briggs, born in 1719, who came to Hobart's Landing, and began to build ships in 1750, was the first of the Briggs ship-builders. He was descended from Walter Briggs, who was in Scituate as early as 1643, and whose name was given to the Cove within the Glades as early as 1650, now known as Briggs' Harbor. In 1773, James Briggs built the famous ship *Columbia*, for whom the Columbia river was named. Walter Briggs was constable in Duxbury for a time, being appointed in June, 1665.

Ship-building made great progress, both in Duxbury, of which little has been written, and all along the North river. In Duxbury, Mr. Prince established his yard around 1700. Others soon followed. There were many difficulties in the way, but all were eventually overcome. The roads—if roads they could be called, excepting a few highways built with great labor—were simply Indian trails or paths. Riding on horseback, about the only means of riding, was a very difficult procedure through the thick woods and underbrush. These same Indian trails were, however, remarkably direct, the "Massachusetts Paythe" of those days from Plymouth to Boston becoming known as "The Old Boston Road," travelled by stage coaches between these points for many years. Today it is the "State Road."

Among those who came to work for Mr. Prince was a young apprentice, toiling on patiently, like so many others, becoming at length skilled in all the details of the business, whose name was destined to be handed down through nearly two hundred years in a line of distinguished men. Alexander Weston was the apprentice, and his son Eliphas was father to the first Ezra Weston, called "King Caesar," a street at the present time bearing the latter name in his honor. The first Ezra Weston was born some time about





WHALERS READY FOR THE VOYAGE



## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

1750, and died in 1836. He was a man of great wealth and many industries. He owned the rope-walk in Duxbury, was an extensive farmer, had large interests in the fishing business, was extensively engaged in foreign commerce, and was called the largest ship-owner in New England, some have even said in the United States.

His son Ezra inherited his father's wealth and added much thereto. He also became a great ship-builder. His first ship-yard was at Harden Hill, called "The Navy Yard." He had others, one at the Point. He had frequently three, four, and sometimes five vessels on the stocks at one time, building ships of all sorts and sizes, many of the largest. Among these were the *Onico*, of nearly seven hundred tons; the *Manito*, the *Vandalia*, the *St. Lawrence*, the *Undine*, the *Admittance*, the *Joshua Bates*, lost at sea; the *Lagoda*, *Mattakeset*, *Margaret*, and *Warwick*—all from four to five hundred and fifty tons, large ships for those days. The last ship he built was the *Hope*, of about eight hundred tons, the largest but one at that time in the United States. "The brig *Smyrna*, built at Duxbury by Ezra Weston and Sons, registering one hundred and sixty-nine tons, was the first American vessel to take the national flag into the Black Sea after it was opened to our commerce, arriving at the port of Odessa on July 28th, 1830." A painting of this vessel can be seen in the Duxbury Public Library. Mr. Weston was called "Young King Caesar." He was born about 1771, and died in 1842. He was father to the Hon. Gershom Bradford Weston, for many years representative, born in 1799, and Ezra (3d), born in 1809.

It is regrettable that with all these names, we fail to find the name of that first little sloop built so long ago. Two of the earliest names we can trace are the *Seaflower* and the *Dolphin*, sloops owned by Joshua Soule in 1728. The whaling business was an early venture here, as we read that in 1729 "a whale veig was begunn." This also was the year that Thomas Prince was married, November 25, to Judith Fox. He had a son Thomas, and daughter Hannah. He died in 1754.

The second shipyard (in Duxbury) of which we learn was owned by Mr. Israel Sylvester, who occupied the site where at a later date he was succeeded by Mr. Frazar. A sloop was built at "Bartlet's yard" in 1732. The third yard was that of Benjamin Freeman at Harden Hill, the fourth was Perez Drew's, the fifth, Samuel Winsor's. Mr. Winsor lived at one time on Clark's Island, and built





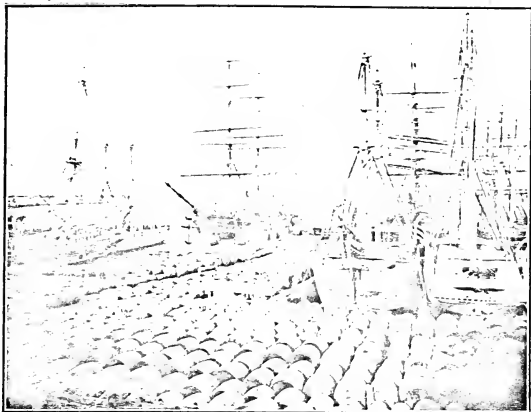
ships there. Mr. Isaac Drew built the first large vessels west and south of Captain's Hill. He was a noted builder for fifty years. His house is still standing south of the hill, and is one of the oldest houses in town. The first wharf in town was built in 1779, but has not survived the ravages of time and weather. About 1790 a wharf was built at the west of this hill by a Mr. Walker. Mr. Isaac Drew had a ship of three hundred tons lying there in 1820. Mr. Drew died in November, 1835, of palsy, aged 87. His wife was Welthea Bradford, a great grand-daughter of Governor Bradford.

One of the noted ship-builders of about 1800 was Mr. Joshua Cushing, who was engaged in the business for thirty years or more. He built vessels of the largest size, the *Pocahontas*, etc. Capt. Sylvanus Drew, Joseph Drew, and Mr. Levi Sampson commenced building about 1800. Mr. Sampson built the brig *Sampson* in 1812, also the full rigged ship *Clematis*, commanded by Captain David Low of Charlestown, sailing from Boston to Havre with passengers, and called the packet between Boston and France. She was succeeded by the *Napoleon* of New York, the Boston agent, Thomas Lamb, fitting her for freight, cotton, etc. Mr. Sampson built the *Rosanna*, the *Rhoshoris*, and others of about three hundred tons. He also built the *Eliot*, which when partly built took fire and was about half burned. He built seventy-five or more vessels, mostly brigs, many of them for Boston and Duxbury. Mr. Sampson retired about 1850.

Mr. Levi Sampson's son, Augustus, about 1847 built the *Ionic*, a packet which sailed up the straits, and was owned by Daniel Sharp. He built the "*Fidelis*" for Sampson & Knowles, who sold her to California in the days when the California gold fever raged. He built the *Mozart* and the *John Allen*, which also went to California, and the brigs *Toncan* and "*Eialus*." Mr. Weston about this time had the ship *St. Lawrence* on the stocks, which caught fire and was nearly half consumed. The fire spread in the yard and the workshops, and all the tools and all the models were destroyed, but Mr. Augustus Sampson succeeded in finishing the ship, modeling the new part from what remained of the old.

Joseph Barstow, about 1800, had a yard near the Nook, southeast from the New Road, now Border street, where he built several schooners. Benjamin Porter had a yard at Harden Hill before 1812. Isaiah Bradford built at Island Creek some time before 1820, his work-house still standing at that time. Joseph Wadsworth and





NEW BEDFORD WHARVES IN PALMY DAYS OF WHALING



WHALER HOVE DOWN FOR REPAIRS



## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

James Southworth both built west of Captain's Hill. James Soule built schooners and market-boats from 1815 until about 1840. Mr. Joseph Drew's work-house was standing in 1820. Samuel Hall, a noted ship-builder, began about 1837, and built some of the largest ships, among which was the *Naraganset*, seven hundred, and the *Constantine*, seven hundred and forty tons, the largest cotton freighting ship at that time in the United States. Mr. Hall went from Duxbury to Medford and from there to East Boston, and established the first shipyard on that island. Many of the Duxbury men went with him.

John Oldham and Jacob Weston built at Duck Hill. Jacob Weston was burned in his own house, which took fire in the night and was utterly consumed. It was supposed he was reading a paper, which caught fire from his lamp, as he was known to be careless in that respect, but his burned and charred remains only were left to tell the tale.

Hon. Seth Sprague, Deacon George Loring, Samuel Delano, Joshua Cushman, Zenas Wadsworth, Reuben Drew, Charles Drew, George Cushing, Samuel A. Frazar and David Turner are some of the names of builders prominent less than a hundred years ago.

Mr. William Paulding was an apprentice to Charles Drew in 1823, afterwards becoming himself a ship-builder, in which business he was engaged for thirty-two years, building fifty-two market boats, schooners, and barks. The *Forest King* and *Equity* were the first two launched by him. In 1849 he launched the bark *Bay State*, commanded by Captain Dill, of Chatham, for the Philadelphia line. In 1858 he built the bark *Smyrniot*, Captain John Weston. She sailed for Smyrna, making the quickest passage on record, being but twenty days to Smyrna, and thirty-two home. She cost \$21,500, and paid for herself before the war. During the war she was bought by the government for \$25,000, and at the close sold for \$12,000 to New York for a packet. Mr. Paulding also built the *Appleton*, *Medora*, *Celestia*, *E. E. Yarrington*, the *Mystery*, *Emblem*, *Andrew Carney*, and the *Jennie Fletcher*, all barks. The *Olive G. Tower* was one of his schooners. While being launched, the chain, which was too short, became broken, the way slipped out, and she fell over on her side directly across the street. With much labor she was finally righted and set afloat.

We are told of seventeen yards that were in full operation at one



## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

time, some have said nineteen, many of them turning out two or three vessels every year. It is said that in the busiest time they "built in every little creek."

About the year 1800 there were ninety sail of fishing vessels belonging to the town, carrying fish to the West Indies, and bringing back sugar, coffee, and molasses, with salt to complete the cargo. At one time there were sixty Bank fishermen belonging to the town, and owned in Duxbury. Many of the inhabitants have been large ship owners.

In 1830 there were forty-three master-mariners resident in the place, and as late as 1868 there were forty. Captain Alexander Wadsworth sailed as master in fifteen different ships, nine of which were Duxbury built. In 1833 he went in the *Favorite* to Triesté with coffee from Boston, returning with currants, etc., etc. In 1835 he went in the *Falco*, built by Nathaniel Cushing, to Rio Janeiro for hides and horns, in the *Ceylon* to Smyrna, in the *Minerva* to London, Cadiz, etc., in the *Vandalia* to New Orleans and Liverpool, in the *Vespasian* to Havana and Kronstadt, in the *Matakeset*, the *Baltimore*, etc. His last voyage was in the *William Wirt* to Havre in 1861.

Porter Keen was the last builder of large vessels in Duxbury, commencing in 1866. Among his schooners were the *Mary D. Leach*, *Mary Chilton*, and *Augustus Wilson*. He built the bark *Samuel G. Reed*, and the last large vessel launched in Duxbury, a three-masted schooner, the *Henry J. Lippett*, one thousand tons, in 1879, removing to Weymouth soon after. Merrit Bros. and Standish built small vessels for a short time, the last one being the *Addie R. Warner* in 1874.

Want of material at hand, and the difficulty and expense of procuring it from the east and south, had much to do with the decline. Most of the business was carried on later at Bath and other eastern ports. In the old busy days of ship-building here, timber was brought from Halifax to Kingston Landing by oxen, and rafted from there to Blue river in Duxbury. Timber was brought from most of the adjoining towns, from Bridgewater, and even from New Hampshire by oxen direct to the points where it was needed. Not infrequently a long line of teams could be seen at different places waiting their turn to be unloaded. There was abundant employment for all, and little opportunity for idleness. Young men were ambitious





## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

to possess land and homes of their own, and young women to make those homes bits of Eden to the ones who should choose them. It was all so simple, so sweet, and beautiful in those days.

Another potent factor has to be reckoned with; namely, the ever-increasing demand for steel and iron ships. The super-dreadnaughts, growing larger and more powerful every year, the entrance of the submarine upon the scene of action, the ever-increasing size and capacity of airships, make all these stories of the early days seem like fairy tales. Yet we turn from the horrors of the World War—from our own Charlestown Navy Yard bristling with battle-ships—to linger a little longer amid these old days of peace and happiness.

Duxbury with its ships and ship builders and ship-masters. We are told that "Duxbury vessels were noted for durability, superior models, and excellent workmanship." It was a sufficient recommendation in the market to know that a ship was Duxbury-built. The name (Duxbury) on the stern ensured a sale, and any seaman who hailed from that town could ship at any port, on any craft, without other credentials. Many of the people have held high rank as merchants, and a considerable number have been Atlantic ship-owners.

The Hon. George B. Loring said in his address at the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary exercises of the town, June 17, 1887: "The names of Sampson and Weston, Drew, Frazar, Loring, Winsor, will outshine in my mind all the McKays and Curriers and Halls that ever launched a ship on the Merrimac, the Mystic, or the shores of Noddles' Island, and will share with John Roach the fame of the American ship-builders, whose vessels defied the storms of ocean and resisted the destructive teeth of time."

At the landing of the French cable exercises Mrs. Loring gave this toast: "In memory of the past generation of ship-masters and ship-builders; may the electric spark now kindled, so animate the coming generation that it may worthily fill the places of the past, is the wish of an old settler."

The Hon. Stephen N. Gifford called upon Dr. Loring to respond, which he did in the following words:

"The old ship-masters and ship-builders of Duxbury! What memories do their names awaken! Their lives form a part of that history of this town, which make it a remarkable illustration of the

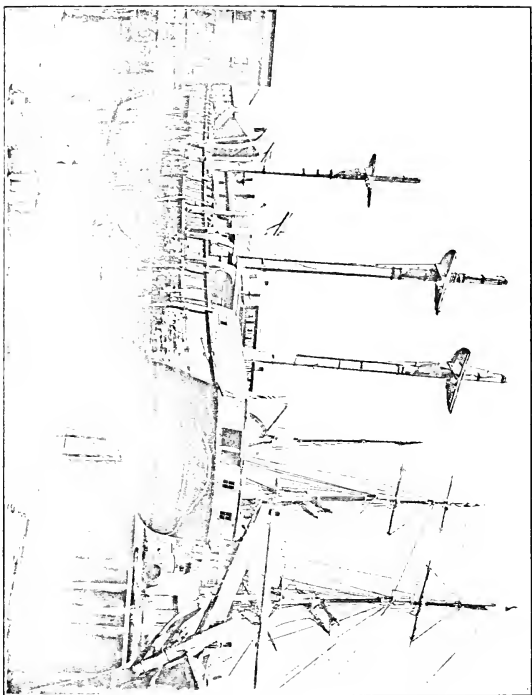


## WHERE THE FIRST SHIPS WERE BUILT IN NEW ENGLAND

advancement and progress for which this age is distinguished. They gave Duxbury a name in all the great markets of the world, and made it a familiar and household word in Antwerp, Hamburg, Liverpool, and London, long ago in the vigorous periods of commerce. And who need be reminded of the Sampsons, that stalwart race, whose axes swung the brightest and the sharpest, and whose hammers as they drove the treenails, wakened me at dawn even in the long summer days. And the Frazars, the Smiths, the Drews, the Soules, and Westons. The old ships may be gone, the *Cherokee*, the *Chacklaw*, the *Susan Drew*, but the good names of their masters still remain."

The shipyards have indeed been long silent, and a season of quiet settled over the beautiful old town. The young people have scattered otherwhere in pursuit of vocations made possible by the coming of the railroad, which is now a many-year-old story. But the old homes were made glad by the home-coming of the young people on the holidays and other occasions, looked forward to by all with eagerness and delight. For somehow, the old place is the dearest spot in all the world to those who have ever called it home. Vacations are longer, and more and more they come, and more and more come. Many strangers to her former greatness have looked upon her broad fields and wide expanse of water, her beautiful old groves, shall we say with covetous eyes? Yes—and with thoughts big with the wonderful possibilities in view. Progress is written on all her fair domain. The stories of her ancient glory are a dream. The fishing vessels and all the others are a tale that is told. But white sails still glide over the blue expanse of her beautiful bay. The half-mile-long bridge to her white beach, well made state-roads, electric lights, town water,—long needed—a most beautiful memorial library—free to all, are some of the attractions undreamed in "ye olden tyme." Let the good work go on, and after this dreadful war, let pleasant, happy homes, homes and schools, and church spires, fill all her hills and valleys. Let telephones and wireless messages reach far-off friends, and all her waste places be filled with gladness and delight; so that her ancient loyalty to all that is high and noble, her spotless record, and proud name, be preserved untarnished—she will be content.





### THE END OF THE VOYAGE.

On sheepish bosoms, muddy waters, anchored near the shore,  
An old dismasted, gray and battered ship, disabled, done and broken,  
After five voyages to all the seas of earth, hauled up at last, and hawser'd tight,  
Lies rusting, mouldering

—Wall Whitman



# Chapters in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia

BY ARTHUR WENTWORTH HAMILTON EATON, M. A., D. C. L.

## No. XIV


### HALIFAX HARBOUR AND ITS FAMOUS TRADITIONS

"Within a long recess there lies a Bay,  
An island shades it from the rolling sea  
And forms a Port secure for ships to ride,  
Broke by the jutting land on either side."

—Dryden's Virgil.

"In addition to its physical beauty, Halifax Harbour is a grand commercial asset, not only for its residents but for the Province and the whole Dominion as well."

—A. Martin Payne in the *New England Magazine* for November, 1906.

 HE noble harbour of Halifax," says Judge Haliburton, in his volume "The Old Judge," published long ago, "is one of the best, perhaps, in the world: its contiguity to Canada and the United States, its accessibility at all seasons of the year, and its proximity to England (it being the most eastern part of this continent) give it a decided advantage over its rival [Bermuda]; while the frightful destruction of stores at Bermuda, from the effects of the climate, its insalubrity, and the dangers with which it is beset, have never failed to excite astonishment at the want of judgment shown in its selection, and the utter disregard of expense with which it has been attended." From Judge Haliburton's opinion of the relative advantages Halifax harbour there has never been any dissent, it is in every respect one of the finest harbours in the world. "During fifty years service," said, once, a distinguished naval officer, "I have seen all the great harbours of the world, Sydney (New South Wales), Rio de Janeiro, Naples, Queenstown, and Halifax, and in my opinion among them Halifax should be placed first, taking into consideration its ease of access from the open ocean, its long stretches of deep water close to the land on both sides, and the perfect shelter it gives ships. From the view-point of a naval base and the requirements of a great





commercial shipping post it is unrivalled around the globe." Says a more recent writer:

"Halifax Harbour is described in nautical works as one of the best in the world, affording space and depth of water sufficient for any number of the largest ships with safety. It is easier of access and egress than any other large harbour on the coast. . . . Unlike New York, Halifax has no intricate entrance channel such as that at Sandy Hook, impassible by Atlantic liners at some conditions of the tide, especially in bad weather." "We have the same broad, open harbour that delighted Colonel Cornwallis on his first approach to our shores, the same wide-mouthed entrance through which the Cunarders in the pioneer days of steamships came and went year after year without accident, let, or hindrance, the same great depth and broad expanse of water that was required to float that huge, clumsy hulk the 'Great Eastern,' the same magnificent roadstead, which the entire British Navy could manoeuvre in. We have also along the harbour's shores light-houses, buoys, and signal stations, and if anything more is needed to make it the most perfect harbour in the world we can have that too."

Halifax harbour proper is a magnificent sheet of water, from eight to twelve fathoms deep, from one to two miles wide, and from the entrance, fifteen miles long, the island known as McNab's giving it the shelter of a natural breakwater. With its forty-two miles of shore line it may be described "as a group of harbours, the main harbour of commerce being flanked on the Dartmouth side by the Eastern Passage and on the city side by the picturesque Northwest Arm."

The importance of the part the harbour has played in the recent world-war, now happily ended, cannot be overestimated, and this in a future chapter we shall hope as adequately as possible to describe. In later chapters we shall also give some account of the horrible tragedy that in the course of the war occurred on the shore of the harbour, visiting with death and destruction much of the north end of the city, and also of the wonderful series of docks that the Dominion Government is now at great cost constructing on the lower harbour for the accommodation of future maritime trade. In the present chapter we shall run back over the seventeen decades during which the harbour has been conspicuously used for human enterprise and sketch briefly the chief maritime—commercial and striking his-



torical naval events that are the outstanding features of the varied history of this beautiful bay.

The first striking episode in the history of the harbour was the sailing into its quiet shelter in the autumn of 1746 of the forlorn remnant of the fleet of the Duc d'Anville, which had proudly left Rochelle, in France, for America, on the 22d of June of that year. D'Anville's fleet consisted of twenty-one war-ships, twenty other frigates and privateers, and several transports, which carried besides a sea force no less than three thousand one hundred and fifty soldiers, militia troops, and marines. The commission the fleet's commander bore ambitiously authorized the retaking and dismantling of Louisburg, effecting a junction with the French troops collected at Baie Verte and expelling the British from Nova Scotia, consigning Boston to flames, ravaging New England, and wasting the British West Indies.<sup>1</sup> Fate, however, had decided against the success of this far reaching policy of the French King, the voyage across the ocean was made difficult and dangerous by contrary winds, and on the 2nd of September, the fleet having reached the dreaded shoals of Sable Island, the whole squadron was there dispersed by a fierce storm, and four ships of the line and a transport were probably sunk. At last, between the 8th and the 16th of September, six or seven ships of the line and a few transports sought refuge in Halifax harbour, and there the Duc d'Anville and his companion officer Vice-Admiral D'Estournelle both died. On the passage scorbutic fever and dysentery had been fatal to twelve or thirteen hundred of the men, and these diseases now continued their ravages until no less than 1,130 more, it is said, had died and been buried on the shore of Bedford Basin, at the upper end of the harbour. The Duc d'Anville himself died of "apoplexy, sickness, or poison," and was probably buried on George's Island, while Vice-Admiral d'Estournelle, "agitated, feverish, and delirious," is reported to have fallen on his sword and as a result died within twenty-four hours after.

Less than three years had passed after d'Anville's mournful few ships steered into the harbour when Colonel Edward Cornwallis

---

<sup>1</sup>See C. Ochiltree MacDonald's "The Last Siege of Louisburg," pp. 23, 24; and many other authorities. By the terms of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, which was concluded and signed in October, 1748, Louisburg so almost miraculously captured, chiefly by New England troops, in 1745, had been restored to France, a blunder that cost England another siege of the place in 1758.



brought hither his fleet, laden with English emigrants to found Halifax, thus opening for the harbour an era of incessant shipping activity which is destined to continue as long as time lasts. In June or July, 1749, as a consequence of the restoration of Louisburg to France, the English and New England civilian residents of the French town in the island of Cape Breton, as well as the troops that had occupied the fortress, came up to Halifax, partly in transports that had been lent them for the passage by Desherbiers, the newly appointed governor of Cape Breton;<sup>2</sup> and these, in addition to the steady stream of schooners and sloops that came directly from Boston, bringing settlers from Massachusetts for Halifax, and also laden with supplies for the civilians and soldiers at the new capital, made the harbour a busy place.

In July, 1757, Admiral Holburne with a fleet of fifteen ships of the line and one vessel of fifty guns, carrying at least twelve thousand men, arrived at Halifax from England, with the intention of recapturing Louisburg, but hearing that the French had a larger force at Cape Breton than he had been led to believe, he abandoned his purpose. The next year, however, the harbour was the rendezvous for another fleet, with the same object in view, the chief commander of this enterprise being Admiral Boscawen. Soon after the middle of May (1758) twenty-three ships of the line, eighteen frigates and a hundred and sixteen transports and small craft sailed into the harbour, General Jeffery Amherst and General Wolfe and the troops they commanded being also with the fleet. On Sunday, May 28th, this formidable armada left for the French stronghold, and the success of the expedition is graphically described by Sir Gilbert Parker and Mr. Claude G. Bryan in their picturesque volume entitled "Old Quebec."<sup>3</sup> "The years since 1745," says these writers, "had been

<sup>2</sup>In his first letter from Chebucko to the Duke of Bedford, dated June 22, 1749, Colonel Cornwallis says that he finds that Governor Hopson of Louisburg, who had been under orders to transport the English troops stationed there to Chebucto, had no transports in which to bring them. As he does not know when he himself can send transports he thinks it absolutely necessary to send the sloop by which Hopson has sent messages to him, to Boston "with orders to Apthorp and Hancock, who Mr. Hopson has recommended as the persons that have been always employed on the part of the Government to hire vessels with all expedition for the transportation of these troops from Louisburg to Chebucto." A few days later, however, Cornwallis rescinded the order to Apthorp and Hancock, but before his second order could get to Boston these enterprising merchants had engaged the transports, so Cornwallis had to pay something for them. The troops at Louisburg seem to have been conveyed to Halifax partly by English transports which had brought the Cornwallis settlers, partly by French ships which had come out with Desherbiers.

<sup>3</sup>Sir Gilbert Parker and Claude G. Bryan, in "Old Quebec, the Fortress of New France" (1903), pp. 253-255.



years of growing strength for Louisburg, and in 1758 it almost equalled Quebec itself in importance. Its capable commandant, the Chevalier de Drucour, counted 4,000 citizens and 3,000 men-at-arms for his garrison; while twelve battleships, mounting 544 guns, and manned by 3,000 sailors and marines, rode at anchor in the rock-girt harbour, the fortress itself, with its formidable outworks, containing 219 cannon and seventeen mortars. Bold men only could essay the capture of such a fortress, but such were Wolfe, Amherst, and Admiral Boscawen, whose work it was to do.

"The fleet and transports sailed from Halifax, bearing eleven thousand, six hundred men full of spirit and faith in their commanders. All accessible landing-places at Louisburg had been fortified by the French; but in spite of this precaution and a heavy surf, Wolfe's division gained the beach and carried the redoubts at Freshwater Cove. A general landing having been thus effected, Wolfe marched round the flank of the fortress to establish a battery at Lighthouse Point. The story may only be outlined here. First the French were forced to abandon Grand Battery, which frowned over the harbour, then the Island Battery was silenced. On the forty-third day of the siege, a frigate in the harbour was fired by shells, and drifting from her moorings, destroyed two sister ships. Four vessels which had been sunk at the mouth of the harbour warded Boscawen's fleet from the assault, but did not prevent six hundred daring blue-jackets from seizing the *Prudent* and *Bienfaisant*, the two remaining ships of the French squadron.

"Meanwhile, zigzag trenches crept closer and closer to the walls, upon which the heavy artillery now played at short range with deadly effect. Bombs and grenades hissed over the shattering ramparts and burst in the crowded streets; roundshot and grape tore their way through the wooden barracks; while mortars and musketry poured a hail of shell and bullet upon the brave defenders. Nothing could save Louisburg, now that Pitt's policy of Thorough had got headway. On the 26th of July, a white flag fluttered over the Dauphin's Bastion; and by midnight of that date Drucour had signed Amherst's terms enjoining unconditional surrender.

"Then the work of demolition commenced. The mighty fortress, which had cast a dark shade over New England for almost half a century, 'the Dunkirk of America,' must stand no longer as a menace. An army of workmen labored for months with pick and spade and blasting-powder upon those vast fortifications; yet nothing but an upheaval of nature itself could obliterate all traces of earthwork, ditch, *glacis*, and casemate, which together made up the frowning fortress of Louisburg. To-day grass grows on the Grand





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

Parade, and daisies blow upon the turf—grown bastions; but who may pick his way over those historic mounds of earth without a sigh for the buried valour of bygone years.”

As every resident of Halifax or visitor to the city knows, the long water-front of the town is flanked by a succession of nearly fifty wharves for the accommodation of ships and the pursuit of maritime trade.<sup>4</sup> Writing the lords of trade the day after his arrival at Chebucto, his impressions of the place selected for the new settlement, Governor Cornwallis says: “All the officers agree the harbour is the finest they have ever seen,” to this adding in a later letter that it is “the finest perhaps in the world.” Along the beach, he says, wharves may easily be built, one already having been finished sufficiently ample to accommodate ships of two hundred tons. In February, 1750, it was proposed in council that a quay should be built along the shore in front of the town, but several merchants, among whom were Messrs. Thomas Saul and Joshua Mauger, having applied for water lots and liberty to build individual wharves along the beach, the question of the quay was referred to the provincial surveyor, Mr. Charles Morris, and the government engineer, Mr. John Bruce, for their decision.<sup>5</sup> The expense of the quay promised to be so heavy and the time required to build it so long that these officials reported unfavorably on it, and licenses to build wharves were accordingly granted.<sup>6</sup> At this period, says Dr. Akins, the line of the shore was so irregular as in some places to afford only a footpath between the base line of the lots which now form the upper side of Water Street and high water mark. At the Market

---

“There are forty-seven docks, piers, and wharves along the water-front of Halifax proper, nine of which, at Richmond and the deep water terminus, have connections at the ships’ side with the Intercolonial railway.” A. Martin Payne, in the *Boston Christian Science Monitor* for November 29, 1911.

“A list of men in the “south suburbs” who sometime in 1750 received permission from Governor Cornwallis to build wharves “on the beach before the town of Halifax, agreeable to order of Council” is the following: Terence Fitzpatrick, John Shippy, John Alden and Jonathan Trumble, Rundle and Crawley, Captain Trevoy, Samuel Cleveland, William Wheeler, Joshua Mauger, Henry Ferguson, and Samuel Sellon. Most of these were New England men.

“At a Council meeting at the Governor’s house on Saturday, February 24, 1750, the Council announced that merchants and others might build wharves where they judged proper, and spoke in favour of their doing so. The members, however, prescribed certain conditions for prospective builders, one of which was that no storehouses should be built on wharves “in front of the town.” “When once this harbour is secure, well peopled, and a certain fishery established,” wrote Cornwallis to the Lords of Trade, March 19, 1750, “people will come from all parts without any expense to the public, and it will be easy to extend to other parts of the Province.”



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

the tide flowed up nearly to where the [old] City Court House stood, forming a cove, into which flowed a brook which came down a little to the north of George Street. Near the Ordnance Yard another cove made in and this part of the shore was low and swampy many years after the batteries were built.

From the business advertisements in the earliest modest newspaper of Halifax in the first year of its publication, the year 1752, we find mention of at least four wharves that were already built,—Barnard's, Captain Cook's, Fairbanks', and Grant's, and there were certainly others like Mauger's, which lay at the foot of Jacob Street. Gerrish's wharf, afterwards known as Marchington's, lay immediately north of the Ordnance Yard, Proctor's is said to have been situated near the spot where the Cunard wharf was in time built, Frederick's later became Beamish's, Fillis's, afterward Mitchell's, was a little south of the King's Wharf, Terence Fitzpatrick's was situated almost or quite on the spot where Esson and Boak's later was built, Crawley's was south of this, and Collier's occupied the spot where the later Pryor's was built. In 1753, as we learn from the *Halifax Gazette*, there was still another wharf known as Bourn and Freeman's.

On Colonel Desbarres' plan of Halifax, made in 1781, Gerrish's wharf, afterward known as Marchington's, is shown as immediately north of the five gun battery, which was slightly north of the Ordnance wharf; Joshua Mauger's is at the foot of Jacob Street; Proctor's seems to be near where Cunard's old wharf now is; Fredericks's, afterward Beamish's, is the present market wharf; Fillis's seems to be the present Mitchell's, a little south of the Queen's Wharf; Terence Fitzpatrick's is situated about where Esson and Boak's now is; Crawley's is slightly south of Fitzpatrick's; and Collier's is identical with the present Pryor's.<sup>7</sup>

The Boston merchants whose enterprise in sending ships to Halifax, for more than a decade after the settlement of the town, was greatest, were Messrs. Charles Apthorp and Thomas Hancock. For some years before Cornwallis came, indeed, these important Boston traders apparently had enjoyed almost a monopoly in supplying, by contract with the Nova Scotia government, the garrisons at Annapolis Royal and Chignecto, and indeed Louisburg when it was in British hands. Some time in 1750, Cornwallis complains to the

<sup>7</sup>See Dr. Akin's *Chronicles of Halifax*, p. 221.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

lords of trade that Messrs. Apthorp and Hancock, "the two richest merchants in Boston, who have made their fortunes out of government contracts," because they could not entirely monopolize the supplying of Halifax had given him a great deal of trouble. "They distress and domineer," he says, "and now wanton in their insolent demands." For some years longer, however, as we have said, Apthorp and Hancock continued to be the chief Boston merchants sending supplies to the town.<sup>3</sup>

The comparative wealth of Halifax up to late in the nineteenth century is recognized by all historians of the economic and social condition of the Maritime Provinces to have been in great measure due to the trade her merchants carried on with the West Indies. This trade, however, did not well begin until some years after the signing of the articles of peace between Great Britain and the United States at Versailles in January, 1783. In the British Parliament in May, 1784, the question of commercial intercourse between the British West Indies and the United States was earnestly discussed. England had hitherto strictly limited the trade of her West Indian colonies to herself and her other colonies, now peace having been established between Great Britain and the United States the West Indian planters remonstrated at such limitation and petitioned to have it removed. Canada, Nova Scotia, and Prince Edward Island, however, made strong efforts to convince the home authorities that the West Indies would still find sufficient markets in British possessions and would have their own needs adequately supplied

---

<sup>3</sup>Thomas Hancock, who built the noted Hancock house on Beacon Hill, Boston, died August 1, 1764. His partner, Charles Apthorp, died November 11, 1758. In the obituary, Mr. Apthorp, in the *Boston Newsletter*, he is called "the greatest and most noted merchant on this Continent." For a brief sketch of his life and a portrait of him, see "Annals of King's Chapel," Vol. 2, p. 144. Thomas Hancock's business, as is well known, was inherited by his nephew (Governor) John Hancock, who continued to trade with Nova Scotia until at least 1773. In Council, July 6, 1750, Governor Cornwallis says that "there having been some difficulty in raising the supplies of money necessary for the service of the Colony, he has agreed to proposals sent him by Messrs. Apthorp and Hancock of Boston, who engaged to provide him with dollars upon condition that they should likewise have the furnishing all stores and materials, which his Excellency understood as meaning all such as might be wanted from that Province, but that these gentlemen had since explained their terms so as to oblige him to take everything whatever wanted for this Province from them and not to leave it in his power to buy anything whatever here or in any of the northern colonies, which terms he could not agree to without first consulting the Council." Delancey & Watts of New York, he says, have written him that provided his Excellency could assure them of the bills being duly honoured there could be no difficulty in being provided with dollars from New York. The Council unanimously agreed that to accede to the proposals of Apthorp and Hancock would be very disadvantageous to the new settlement. See Nova Scotia Archives, vol. I. See also the "Correspondence of William Shirley."



from British sources, except indeed in the matter of rice. In discussing the question, the West Indian sugar planters admitted that "on every principle of honour, humanity, and justice," the Loyalist refugees of Canada and Nova Scotia were entitled to a preference in their trade, provided that Canada and Nova Scotia had the products to supply the West Indies, but they contended that before any permanent regulations governing their trade should be made, exact information should be sought as to how much of the annual consumption of American staples in the West Indies these provinces had hitherto supplied and how much they might be expected in the future to supply.

When the matter was thoroughly examined by means of custom house records, it was found that of 1,208 cargoes of lumber and provisions imported from North America into the British sugar-raising colonies in the year 1772, only seven of the cargoes were from Canada and Nova Scotia, and that of 701 topsail vessels and 1,681 sloops which had been cleared from North America to the British and foreign West Indies in the same year, only two of the topsail vessels and eleven of the sloops were from those provinces. Respecting Nova Scotia, it was stated that this province had never at any one period produced enough grain for its own people, and had never exported lumber "worthy the name of merchandise," and that a considerable amount of the lumber it was then producing was being used to build houses for the Loyalists in the town of Port Roseway.

Between April 3, 1783, and October 26, 1784, no flour, ship-biscuit, Indian corn or other meal, horses, cattle, sheep, hogs, or poultry came into the island of Jamaica from Canada, Nova Scotia, or Prince Edward Island, the only provisions were 180 bushels of potatoes, 751 hogsheads and about 500 barrels of salted fish, with also some manufactured lumber. Previous to the war of the Revolution, in the years 1768-1772, the whole imports into Jamaica from Canada, Nova Scotia, and Prince Edward Island were seven hogsheads of fish, eight barrels of oil, three barrels of tar, pitch, and turpentine, 36,000 shingles and staves, and 27,235 feet of lumber.

In the year 1807, however, as is shown by Judge Haliburton in his statistical account of Nova Scotia, fifty ships aggregating 5,013 tons, arrived at Halifax from the West Indies, while eighty ships, with a tonnage of 9,269 left this port for the West Indies. Twelve years later, in the year 1828, a hundred and sixty-seven ships, with a





tonnage of 17,062 arrived at Halifax, while a hundred and seventy-seven ships, with a tonnage of 18,739, were cleared for the West Indies. From other sources than Haliburton we further learn that the value of imports to Halifax from the West Indies between January 5, 1819, and January 5, 1823, was £348.175, while the value of exports to these islands in the same period was £621.494. During the six months ending September 30, 1866, there arrived at Halifax, from the British West Indies, fifty vessels with a tonnage of 7,844, and from the Foreign West Indies sixty-five vessels with a tonnage of 7,446, these ships bringing rum (as the most valuable import), sugar, molasses, brandy, gin, salt, and coffee. The total value of imports from the British West Indies in this period was \$238,143, from the Spanish West Indies \$233,246, from the French \$11,017, from the Danish \$5,326. Exports from Halifax to these islands included all agricultural products, gypsum, lime, plaster, cattle, apples, hides, fish oil and fish.<sup>9</sup>

In all records of the early shipping activities and general commerce of Halifax, the names conspicuously appear of Joshua Mauger and Thomas Saul, the latter of whom, a member of the Council, Dr. Akins says, was the wealthiest and most enterprising merchant of the town from 1749 to 1760. The career of Joshua Mauger we have elsewhere in this history sketched; he was the son of a Jewish merchant in London, who in early life began to trade between certain West Indian ports, later extending his activities to the French town and garrison of Louisburg. At the founding of Halifax he took up his residence in this town, establishing truck-houses in the interior of the province, setting up three distilleries of rum in the capital, and also securing there the position of agent-victualler to the government. Of Thomas Saul we know less than we do of Mauger, but there can be no doubt that he also was an English-born man. Precisely when he first came to Halifax we have not discovered, but

---

<sup>9</sup>See "The History, Civil and Commercial, of the British Colonies in the West Indies," by Bryan Edwards, Esq., 3rd edition, volume 2, Book 6, Chapter 4. See also Haliburton's "Historical and Statistical Account of Nova Scotia" (2 volumes, 1829), volume 2; Murdoch's "History of Nova Scotia," vol. 3, pages 445, 503; and "Various Statements connected with Trade and Commerce of the Province of Nova Scotia for the Twelve Months ended 30 September, 1886" (Halifax, 1886). Of moderate sized manufacturing plants, Halifax has had and has a considerable number, most if not all of which have had their beginning since 1815. These comprise sugar refineries, flour-mills, bakeries, canneries, cordage-factories, carriage-factories, cabinet works, soap, candle, glue, linseed oil, comb, brush, tobacco, paper, and confectionery factories, distilleries of rum, gin, and whiskey, and breweries of ale and porter.



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

his trading ventures like Mauger's must have begun soon after the town was established. About 1753, says Dr. Akins, he built the most elegant private residence in the town. Having made a fortune in Halifax, about the same time as Mauger he also probably returned to England to spend the rest of his days. "Among the principal merchants in Halifax in 1769," says Dr. Akins, "the Hon. John Butler, uncle to the late Hon. J. Butler Dight, Robert Campbell on the Beach, John Grant, Alexander Brymer, and Gerrish and Gray appear most prominent. Among the shopkeepers and tradesmen who advertised during this year were Robert Fletcher on the Parade, bookseller and stationer, Andrew Cunod, grocer, Hammond and Brown, auctioneers, and Robert Millwood, blockmaker, who advertised the best Spanish River Coal at thirty shillings a chaldron." Among the New England born merchants of most note in the early history of the town were Joseph Fairbanks, John Fillis, Benjamin Garrish, Malachy Salter, and Robert Sanderson. As the town progressed we find among the leading merchants, Michael Francklin, from England, Thomas Cochran and Charles Hill, from the North of Ireland, Michael and James Tobin and Edward Kenny from farther south in Ireland, and a good many enterprising men directly from Scotland, who and whose descendants have always borne a conspicuous part in the social as well as commercial activities of the place.

In a valuable monograph on Nova Scotia privateers at different periods, written by Mr. George Nichols of Halifax, and published in the Collections of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, we find important facts concerning the ships fitted out at Halifax at different periods to prey on the sea commerce of hostile countries. In the autumn of 1756, Messrs. Malachy Salter and Robert Sanderson together fitted out a schooner of a hundred tons burden, called the *Lawrence*, and on the 16th of November started her on a privateering voyage against the French. This vessel, Mr. Nichols says, was the first privateer to be fitted out at Halifax. She was armed with fourteen carriage four-pounder guns, and twenty swivel guns, besides small arms and ammunition sufficient for a six months cruise, and had a crew of a hundred men, and her captain carried a letter of marque authorizing him to capture if he could any French trading ship with her cargo that he might come upon afloat. At the same time two other trading vessels owned in Halifax, the *Hertford* and



the *Musketo*, the first, owned partly by John Hale, a vessel of three hundred tons, armed with twenty carriage guns, and carrying a crew of 170 men, the second, owned by Joshua Mauger and John Hale, of a hundred and twenty tons, manned by a crew of eighty men.

"During the Seven Years War," says Mr. Nichols, "which lasted from 1756 to 1763, I can learn of at least fifteen privateers that were armed and fitted out at this port. The names of these vessels and their commanders have been preserved to us, together with the particulars of their tonnage and armament and the number of their crews. These privateers were larger and more heavily armed than their successors of the Revolutionary period. Several of them were ships of three and four hundred tons burthen, carrying upwards of a hundred and sixty men, and armed with as many as twenty carriage guns and twenty-two swivels. The tonnage of these vessels seems to be no indication of their armament, for the small schooner *Lawrence* of a hundred tons carried fourteen carriage guns and twenty swivels, while the *Wasp*, another vessel of the same size, carried twenty guns and a hundred and fifty men. The majority of the cruises starting from Halifax were directed against the French in southern waters, and the commissions authorizing them generally named six months as the period during which they might lawfully be prosecuted." Several of the privateers sailing from Halifax at this period, however, were not owned in Nova Scotia, but in other British Provinces or in England. The Halifax shipping merchants that were most conspicuous in these privateering expeditions of the Seven Years War, and so that may properly be considered the leading ship-owners here at this period, were Messrs. Michael Francklin, Joshua Mauger, Malachy Salter, Robert Sanderson, Thomas Saul, and William Ball.

In the early period of the American Revolution all the waters about the Nova Scotia shores were infested with privateering vessels sent from the revolting colonies, and their crews committed many serious depredations at various ports. By an act of the Imperial Parliament any British sympathizer could obtain leave from the provincial government to arm and man any vessel he owned to resist and capture the enemy, and under this act a considerable number of privateer schooners were sent out from various ports, notably Halifax and Liverpool, to seize any booty they could from hostile vessels anywhere on the seas. "Of their success," says Mr. Nichols, "there



## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

is no doubt, for while records are meagre, no less than forty-eight prizes and four recaptures arrived in Halifax alone between the 4th of January and the 20th of December, 1778, among the captures being six ships, seven brigs, and nine brigantines." "Between 1779 and 1781," he further says, "we have records of forty-two prizes and recaptures brought into this port, among them being three ships, six brigs, and twelve brigantines." By this time, it is clear, many of the vessels employed either in peaceful commerce or in privateering by Nova Scotia traders were built at Nova Scotia ports, but concerning the number and extent of ship building enterprises at or near Halifax then we are not at present informed.

By 1793, England and France had once more begun active hostilities, and under the authority of the Imperial Government, letters of marque could be obtained by all owners of armed vessels to seize French ships and their cargoes wherever they could find them. The Nova Scotia privateering at this period was conducted by merchants and captains chiefly from the two ports of Liverpool and Halifax, the greater activity, however, being at the southern port. In the war of 1812, one of the first hostile measures taken by the United States against England was to issue letters of marque against British ships, and within a month after war was declared Nova Scotians under the personal authority of the governor of the province, Sir John Coape Sherbrooke, were likewise exercising the privateering right. Between 1812 and 1815, Nova Scotia vessels brought into the various leading ports of the province more than two hundred prizes, exclusive of a number of recaptures, Halifax of course having her due share of these prizes.<sup>10</sup>

His Majesty's Dockyard at Halifax, the "Naval Yard," as this famous inclosure on the shores of the harbour was originally called, has a long and varied history that links closely with Britain's naval history at large since the Dockyard was founded. The initial site

---

<sup>10</sup>"At this period of the war [of 1812] the English ships of war did not molest the unarmed coasting and fishing vessels of the Americans, but the American privateers were not of the same mind. Our coasters, fishermen, and colliers were captured, pillaged, and sometimes used cruelly. On the 8th of October a boat's crew from an American privateer landed on Sheep Island, at the mouth of Tusket river, where lived a poor man named Francis Clements, and his family. Without provocation they shot the man dead, ransacked his house, carried off stock, and went away. This privateer was shortly after captured by the Shannon, and the homicide was identified among the prisoners as the first lieutenant of the privateer. Clements left a widow and nine orphan children, the oldest only seventeen, the second daughter a helpless cripple." Murdoch's "History of Nova Scotia," vol. 3, p. 333.





for the Naval Yard was secured under deed on the 7th of February, in the year of our Lord 1759. The trustees to whom the deed was given were Admiral Philip Durell, and Messrs. Joseph Gerrish and William Nesbitt, Esquires, and the purpose for which the two lots the site comprised, "in the north suburbs of Halifax," were granted, was specified to be "for the use and uses of a Naval Yard for the use of His Majesty's Navy or such other uses as His Majesty shall direct and appoint and to or for no other use, intent, or purpose whatever." On the 4th of January, 1765, a third lot was obtained for the extension of the yard, and henceforth for well on towards a century and a half the Halifax Dockyard was the official headquarters of business in connexion with the British navy on the North American coast. Soon after the first deed of land for the Dockyard site was secured, buildings necessary for carrying on the navy's official business were begun, including storehouses for masts, sails, coal, oil, and provisions, and residences for the commissioner of the yard and his clerks and other employees. In 1770 the first conspicuous gate to the Dockyard was built, and this stood until 1844, when another was erected to take its place. In 1883 the gate was rebuilt again.

In 1783 a naval hospital outside the yard was added to the establishment, and in 1814 a piece of land high up on the hill overlooking the yard was purchased for the erection of a large stone dwelling house for the Admiral on the station, when he should be here, and the locally famous residence known as "Admiralty House" was begun. At some early date, we do not know precisely when, a small tract near the Dockyard was set apart for a naval cemetery. In his "History of Nova Scotia," published in 1829, Judge Haliburton wrote:

"Of Government establishments [in Halifax] the most important is the King's Dockyard. This was commenced about the year 1758 and has been not only of infinite service to the navy during the late war, but by its very great expenditure of money, of most essential advantage to the Province. It is enclosed on the side towards the town by a high stone wall, and contains within it very commodious buildings for the residence of its officers and servants, besides stores, warehouses, and workshops of different descriptions. It is on a more respectable footing than any in America, and the vast number of ships refitted there during the last twenty years, and the prodigious labour and duty performed on them are strong proofs of its



regulation and order. In the rear of the Dockyard and on an elevated piece of ground that overlooks the works and the harbour, is the Admiral's house, which is a plain stone building erected partly by funds provided by Government and partly by a grant of the Provincial Legislature. This house was completed in 1820, and as its name denotes is designed for the residence of the Admiral or senior Naval Officer commanding on the Station."

In his "Old Judge" this same author writes:

"The Dockyard at Halifax is a beautiful establishment, in excellent order, and perfect of its kind, with the singular exception of not having the accommodation of a dock from which it derives its name." Nova Scotia, he writes, is the principal naval station of Britain on this side of the Atlantic, but it shares this honour with Bermuda, the Admiral residing in summer at the former place, in winter at the latter. The arrival of this high official at Halifax in the spring "is always looked forward to with anxiety and pleasure, as it at once enlivens and benefits the town. Those common demonstrations of respect, salutes, proclaim the event, which is soon followed by the equally harmless and no less noisy revels of sailors, who give vent to their happiness in uproarious merriment. The Admiral is always popular with the townspeople, as he often renders them essential services, and seldom or never comes into collision with them. He is independent of them, and wholly disconnected with the civil government. 'Lucky fellow!' as Sir Hercules Sampson, the Governor, once said; 'he has no turbulent House of Assembly to plague him.'" "On an eminence immediately above the Dockyard," he adds, "is the official residence, a heavy, square, stone building, surrounded by massive walls, and resembling in its solidity and security a public asylum. The entrance is guarded by two sentinels, belonging to that gallant and valuable corps, the marines, who combine the activity of the sailor with the steadiness and discipline of the soldier, forming a happy mixture of the best qualities of both, and bearing a very little resemblance to either. 'These ambitious troops,' my old friend Sir James Capstan used to say, 'are very much in the way on board of a ship, except in action, and then they are always in the right place.'"

A complete list of the war ships that have anchored in Halifax harbour since 1759 would include most of the great ships of England's majestic fleet; the naval commanders-in-chief who in succession have ordered their flag-ships into these smooth waters, and for the time being have occupied Admiralty House, have included



many of the greatest Admirals, Rear Admirals, and Vice Admirals of the noblest navy of modern times."<sup>1</sup>

No single event in connexion with Halifax harbour has greater dramatic interest than the arrival in its waters of the British frigate *Shannon* with the captured United States frigate *Chesapeake* in June, 1813. The war of 1812 was the culmination of a gradually increasing animosity on the part of the United States against England for the frequent exercise of the latter's claim that she had a right to impress British seamen or seamen asserted to be British from on board United States merchant vessels wherever they might be found. This alleged right the United States strongly disputed, and England not yielding, at last the inevitable conflict came. One of the United States vessels from which seamen had been taken was the *Chesapeake*, the command of which at Boston in May, 1812, had been given to Captain James Lawrence, who the year previous had earned distinction as commander of another American ship, the *Hornet*. On the 31st of May, 1813, on the *Chesapeake*, Lawrence received a challenge from Captain Broke of the British frigate *Shannon*, which was then cruising in Boston harbour, and although the *Chesapeake* was poorly fitted for an engagement, chiefly owing to the fact that she had an unreliable crew, the challenge was accepted and the next day the fight took place. The engagement began with fierce volleys of shots fired from the opposing ships simultaneously, the injury from which to the vessels themselves was slight, but which caused on both a considerable loss of life. On the *Chesapeake*, both Lawrence and his lieutenant, Augustus Ludlow, were severely wounded, Lawrence having received his wound in the leg. The anchor of the American ship fouling on one of the after ports of the *Shannon*, the crew of the latter was able to board the *Chesapeake*, and the sailors of this vessel "could not be made to repel" the British crew. In the skirmish that ensued, Captain Lawrence was mortally wounded by a musket shot and had to be carried to the wardroom. While passing the gangway he cried to his

<sup>1</sup>"Other interesting facts in this connexion than those we have here given including a list of the naval commanders-in-chief who temporarily resided on this station between 1767 and 1891 will be found in an interesting article entitled "Dockyard Memoranda," by Charles H. Stubbing, Esq., a former clerk in the Dockyard, published in the Collections of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, vol. 13, pp. 103-100. Some time before 1759 Mr. Joseph Gerrish, formerly of Boston, older brother of Benjamin Gerrish, likewise of Halifax, was appointed naval storekeeper at the Dockyard, and this position he held for a number of years. He received a salary for his work, of a hundred pounds a year, and he had a clerk who received fifty pounds.



men "Don't give up the ship!" but the fate of the battle was decided, and Lieutenant Ludlow, himself desperately and as it proved mortally wounded, who had assumed command, quickly surrendered. The *Shannon* with her prize then made for Halifax, but before she could reach port Captain Lawrence died. In the engagement, sixty men, including Captain Lawrence, of the American frigate's crew, were killed, and eighty-three were wounded. Of the British frigate's crew twenty-six were killed and fifty-seven, including Captain Broke, were wounded. The ships arriving at Halifax, the *Chesapeake's* commander was buried with military honors in the burying ground on Pleasant Street, his funeral taking place on the 8th of June. On the 13th of June Lieutenant Ludlow died at Halifax, and he too received military burial. Early in August both bodies were disinterred and carried by Captain George Crowninshield, Jr., in his own vessel, at his own expense, under a flag of truce to Salem, Massachusetts, where on the 23rd of August they were given another funeral. They were then carried over land to New York City and buried in Trinity churchyard again with all the honors of war. When the two ships reached Halifax Captain Lawrence's body was landed under a discharge of minute guns at the King's Wharf, whence it was carried probably directly to the burying ground on Pleasant Street. On its way it was attended by the *Chesapeake's* surviving officers, the officers of the British army and navy on service at Halifax, and many of the leading inhabitants of the town. The pall was borne by six captains of the Royal navy, a military band was in attendance, and three hundred men of the Sixty-fourth regiment followed in the procession. The burial service was rendered by the Rector of St. Paul's, the Reverend Robert Stanser, D. D., after which three volleys were fired over the grave. Lawrence's ship the *Chesapeake* was kept at Halifax until October, 1813, when she was taken to England and probably put in commission in the British service. In 1820 her timbers were sold to a miller of Wickham, in Hants, by whom they were used in the construction of a flour mill.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup>Captain James Lawrence was the youngest son of Judge John Lawrence, of Burlington, New Jersey, and was born at Burlington, October 1, 1781. He entered the navy as a midshipman in 1798, received his lieutenantcy in 1802, and was promoted captain and assigned to the *Hornet* in 1811. He died on board the *Chesapeake*, June 6, 1813. Lieutenant Ludlow, as we have said, died at Halifax, June 13, 1813. On the 10th of August, under a flag of truce Captain Crowninshield arrived at Halifax from Salem, and with the bodies of the two officers left very soon. An interesting account of the battle between the *Shannon* and the *Chesapeake* will be found in the late Theodore Roosevelt's "The Naval War of 1812," New York, 1882.





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

In Trinity Churchyard, New York City, a little to the left of the main entrance from Broadway stands a large granite sarcophagus, on which the following inscription may be read:

“In Memory of CAPTAIN JAMES LAWRENCE, of the United States Navy, who fell on the 1st day of June, 1813, in the 32nd year of his age, in the action between the frigates Chesapeake and Shannon. He was distinguished on various occasions, but especially when commanding the sloop of war Hornet he captured and sunk his Britannick Majesty's sloop of war Peacock, after a desperate action of fourteen minutes. His bravery in action was equalled only by his modesty in triumph and his magnanimity to the vanquished. In private life He was a Gentleman of the most generous and endearing qualities, the whole Nation mourned his loss and the Enemy contended with his Countrymen who should most honour his remains.”

On the east end of the sarcophagus is inscribed the following: “The Heroick Commander of the frigate Chesapeake, whose remains are here deposited, expressed with his expiring breath his devotion to his Country. Neither the fury of battle, the anguish of a mortal wound, nor the horrors of approaching death could subdue his gallant spirit. His dying words were: ‘Don't Give Up The Ship.’”

On the South side of the sarcophagus is inscribed: “In Memory of LIEUTENANT AUGUSTUS C. LUDLOW, Born in Newburgh, 1792, Died in Halifax, 1813. Scarcely was he 21 years of age, when like the blooming Euryalus he accompanied his beloved Commander to battle. Never could it have been more truly said ‘*His amor unus erat, pariterque in bella ruebant.*’ The favorite of Lawrence and second in command, he emulated the patriotic valour of his friend on the bloody decks of the Chesapeake, and when required, like him yielded with courageous resignation his Spirit to Him who gave it.”

In the War of 1812, says Mrs. William Lawson, several United States naval officers were taken prisoners and sent to Halifax for safe keeping. These were generally quartered on the eastern side of the harbour, and those of them who were on parole were lodged in the farm houses in or near Preston and Dartmouth. They were allowed perfect liberty of action, except in the matter of crossing the ferry to Halifax, the town being the only point from which they could hope to escape. They were all quiet, gentlemanlike men, and were cordially entertained and much liked by the farmers and their



families, and they were not slow in making love to the girls, in some cases engaging to marry them. Naturally, however, they chafed at their internment, and when peace was declared were glad to leave. The Preston farmers' daughters waited in vain for them to return to marry them; the faithless foreigners never fulfilled the promises they had made "in the rosy twilight or under the glow of the inconstant moon."

A year after the arrival at Halifax of the *Shannon* and *Chesapeake*, on the 5th of July, 1814, a British expedition was secretly dispatched from Halifax harbour for the capture of Eastport, Maine. Either lower down the harbour or at some point without, a fleet six days from Bermuda joined the expedition, and together all sailed for the Maine coast. The whole fleet now comprised the *Ramilies*, having on board the commodore, Sir Thomas Hardy, the *Martin*, a sloop-of-war, the big *Borer*, the *Breame*, the *Terror*, a bomb ship, and several transports, on board of which was a very considerable military force. On the 11th of July the ships anchored abreast of Eastport and the commodore at once demanded the surrender of the fort. The officer in command was Major Perley Putnam, of Salem, Massachusetts, and he at first refused the demand and prepared to meet the assault. Through the earnest persuasion of the inhabitants, however, he was reluctantly induced to order his flag struck without resistance, and the British took possession of the fort.

On the 26th of August of the same year, another expedition left Halifax to seize Penobscot and Machias, Maine. The ships in this fleet were three 74's, the *Dragon*, the *Spenser*, and the *Bulwark*, two frigates, the *Burhante* and the *Tenedos*, lately from the Mediterranean, two sloops of war, the *Sylph* and the *Peruvian*, an armed schooner, the *Pictu*, a large tender, and ten transports. The number of troops they carried was about 3,000, the land forces among which were directly commanded by Major General Gosselin, with Lieutenant-General Sir John Coape Sherbrooke, then and for nearly two years longer lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia (under the governor general of all the British provinces), in highest command. The naval squadron was under command of Rear Admiral of the White Edward Griffith. September 1st the fleet rode into the harbour of Castine and anchored in sight of the fort. The troops in the garrison, seeing resistance entirely vain, then blew up the fort and



fled for safety into the interior. For eight months the British held this military post, but on the 25th of April, 1815, a treaty of peace between England and the United States having been signed at Ghent the previous December, they finally evacuated Castine, and English power ceased forever in the whole of eastern Maine.<sup>13</sup>

The commanding officer of the *Shannon* when she came with her prize the *Chesapeake* into Halifax harbour was a Halifax man. In January, 1812, young Provo William Parry Wallis, who was born at Halifax April 12, 1791, was appointed second lieutenant of the *Shannon*, then commanded by Captain Philip Bowes Vere Broke. Captain Broke being dangerously wounded in the *Shannon's* engagement with the *Chesapeake*, and his first lieutenant being killed, Wallis, although only a little over twenty-two, was left in command. Admiral Sir Provo William Parry Wallis, G. C. B., as he afterwards became, earning for himself in his long distinguished naval career the title of "Father of the Fleet," was the son of an Englishman, Provo Featherstone Wallis, who was chief clerk to the naval commissioner in Halifax, and his wife Elizabeth (Lawlor), granddaughter of Thomas Lawlor, one of the Bostonians who had settled at Halifax in or shortly after 1749.

In the "Dictionary of National Biography" will be found a sketch of Admiral Sir Edward Belcher, K. C. B., another Haligonian, who was born in Halifax in 1799. Admiral Belcher's parents were the Hon. Andrew and Marianne (Geyer) Belcher, his paternal grandfather having been the first Chief Justice of Nova Scotia. In 1812 Belcher entered the navy as a midshipman, and six years later he was made a lieutenant. A great part of his active life was spent in making naval surveys, but in 1852 he was appointed to command an expedition to the arctic in search of Sir John Franklin. For such a peculiarly difficult command he is said to have had "neither temper nor tact," and in the enterprise, which was fruitless, he inspired great dislike among his men. In making surveys he spent much time in the Pacific and at Behring Straits, on the west and north coasts of Africa, at Borneo, the Philippine Islands, and China, in the Irish Sea, and on the west coast of both North and South America. He was made commander in 1829, advanced to post rank in 1841, received knighthood in 1843, attained his flag in 1861, and became vice-admiral in 1866, and admiral in 1872. In 1867 he was

<sup>13</sup>See Williamson's "History of Maine," 2 vols., 1832.



further honoured with a K. C. B. The last part of his life he spent quietly in scientific and literary occupations. Belcher published in 1835 "A Treatise on Nautical Surveying," in 1843 "Narrative of a Voyage round the World in H. M. Ship Sulphur during the years 1836-1842;" in 1848 "Narrative of the Voyage of H. M. Ship Samarang," in 1855 "The Last of the Arctic Voyages," and in 1856 a three volume novel entitled "Horatio Howard Brenton, a Naval Novel." In 1867 he edited Sir W. H. Smyth's "Sailors' Word Book." He died March 18, 1817.

Two other famous British naval officers were born near Halifax. These were Admiral Philip Westphal and Captain Sir George Augustus Westphal, sons of George Westphal, Esq., a retired German army officer, one of the first grantees of and settlers in the township of Preston. Admiral Philip Westphal, the elder of these men, was born at Preston in 1782, and entered the British navy in 1794. From 1794 to 1802 he served successively on the *Oiseau*, the *Albatross*, the *Shannon*, the *Asia*, and the *Blanche*, one of the frigates with Nelson at Copenhagen. For his share in this action he was promoted to a lieutenancy and placed on the *Defiance*. In May, 1802, he was appointed to the *Amazon*, with Nelson, off Toulon. After much more service, in June, 1815, he was made commander. From the *Kent*, on July 22, 1830, he was advanced to post rank. In 1847, he was retired on a Greenwich Hospital pension, rising in due course, on the retired list, in 1855 to be rear-admiral, in 1862 to be vice-admiral, and in 1866 to be admiral. He died at Ryde, March 16, 1880.

Admiral Sir George Augustus Westphal, younger brother of Admiral Philip Westphal, was born at Preston either March 27 or July 26, 1785. He entered the navy on board the *Porcupine* frigate on the North American station in 1798. He afterward served on the home station and in the West Indies, in March, 1803, joining the *Amphion*, which carried Nelson out to the Mediterranean. Off Toulon he was moved into the *Victory*, in which ship he was wounded at the battle of Trafalgar. While he was lying in the cockpit after receiving his wound, Nelson's coat, hastily rolled up, was put under his head for a pillow. It is related that some of the bullions of the epaulettes got entangled in his hair, and that the blood from his wound as it dried fastened them there so that several of them had to be cut off before the coat could be released. These bullions





## CHAPTERS IN THE HISTORY OF HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA

Westphal long treasured as mementoes of Nelson. After much distinguished service in many places, he was in 1819 advanced to post rank. In May, 1822, he was appointed to the *Jupiter*, in which he carried Lord Amherst to India. On his return to England, in 1824, he was knighted. He was advanced in regular gradation to be rear-admiral in 1851, vice-admiral in 1857, and admiral in 1863. He died at Hove, Brighton, January 11, 1875. He married in 1817, Alicia, widow of William Chambers.<sup>14</sup>

The Cunard Steamship Company, as is well known, was founded by Sir Samuel Cunard, Bart., a Halifax merchant, and for a long time Halifax was the first stopping place for the Cunard ships on this side of the Atlantic. The story of the Cunard enterprise will appear in another chapter of this history.

---

<sup>14</sup>For the brothers Westphal, see Mrs. William Lawson's "History of Dartmouth, Preston, and Lawrencetown," Halifax County, pp. 201-205.





## Bassett and Allied Families

*Bassett Arms*—Or, three piles meeting in the base of the escutcheon gules, a canton argent charged with a griffin passant sable.

*Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet, or a boar's head, gules.



THE American Bassetts have every reason to be proud of their descent, as well as of the family record in modern day, for they trace ancient lineage through several lines,—Bassett, Dymoke, Brewster (Elder William Brewster, of *Mayflower* fame), and others. The later generations have filled worthy place in professional callings and in the industrial world, one distinguished member having been Richard Bassett, a signer of the Constitution of the United States.

I. The founder of the line herein traced in America was William Bassett, a descendant of the great house of Sapcote, and through them of Chief Justice Ralph and of Thurstan and Osmund, the Norman, a maternal line springing from the houses of Telidy and Umberleigh. The family has descent from the English kings from Henry I. through Maud Fitz-Henry, while the most ancient lineage is from Maud Ridel, wife of Richard Bassett, who was a direct descendant of Walgrinees, of the family of King Charles the Bald, and who was created by him Duke of Angouleme and Perigord as early as A. D. 886.

The ship *Fortune* brought William Bassett to America in 1621, among the little band whose arrival so rejoiced those of their comrades who had come to the Plymouth Colony in the previous year. Until his death in 1667 he held a position for which his birth and talents fitted him, and was close in the councils of the dignitaries of the colony. He was three times married, his third wife, Elizabeth Tilden, and he was the father of the following children: William, of whom further; Elizabeth, born 1626, died 1670; Nathaniel, born 1628, died 1709; Joseph; Sarah, married, in 1648, Peregrine White, the first English child born in Cape Cod; Jane.

II. *William (2) Bassett*, eldest child of William (1) and Elizabeth (Tilden) Bassett, was born in 1624, and died in 1670, bequeathing to his children a large estate. Like his father, he filled important place in local affairs, and upon his death at a comparatively early age, appointed his friends, Governors Winslow and Hinckley, joint guardians of his children. His home at the time of his death was in Sandwich, and he is noted on the records with the complimentary



## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

title of "Mr." He married Mary, daughter of Hugh Burt, of Lynn, and had children: Mary, born 1654; William (3), of whom further.

*III. William (3) Bassett*, son of William (2) and Mary (Burt) Bassett, was born in 1656, and died in 1721. He was marshal of Plymouth Colony at the time of its union with Massachusetts, and also filled the offices of judge of the Court of Common Pleas and Registrar of Probate. William (3) Bassett married Rachel Willison, of Taunton, and had children: Mary, born 1676; Nathan, born 1677; Rachel, born 1679, died 1744; William, of whom further; Jonathan, born 1683; Thankful, born 1687, died 1777.

*IV. William (4) Bassett*, son of William (3) and Rachel (Willison) Bassett, married Abigail, daughter of Elisha Bourne.\* They were the parents of: Mary, born 1709; William, born 1711; Captain Elisha, born 1713; John, born 1716; Deacon Thomas, born 1717, died 1809; Nathaniel, of whom further; Jonathan, born 1721; Abigail, born 1722; Elizabeth, born 1724; Nathan, born 1727, died 1728; Hannah, born 1730.

*V. Nathaniel Bassett*, son of William (4) and Abigail (Bourne) Bassett, was born October 15, 1719, and died in Falmouth, in 1814. His home was for a long time in Sandwich, and he married, July 4, 1745, Hannah, born about 1723, died at Sandwich, June 22, 1790, daughter of Joseph and Rebecca (Sears) Hall, and granddaughter of Deacon John Hall. Rebecca (Sears) Hall was the daughter of Paul and Merey (Freeman) Sears, granddaughter of Paul Sears, born in 1637, and great-granddaughter of Richard and Dorothy (Thatcher) Sears, founders of the family in America. It is in the marriage of Nathaniel Bassett with Hannah Hall that the Bassett line forms its connection with the family of Elder William Brewster, Hannah Hall being seventh in descent from that Pilgrim father. Children of Nathaniel and Hannah (Hall) Bassett: 1. Rebecca, born 1747. 2. Joseph, born Sept. 3, 1749, died 1817. He was a participant in the famous act of patriotic protest that lives in history under the quaintly humorous title of "Boston Tea Party." 3. Abigail, born in September, 1751. 4. Edmund, born in July, 1753. 5. Hannah, born in May, 1755. 6. Nathaniel, born Jan. 26, 1758, died 1846; married Bethia Smith. 7. Elisha, born 1761. 8. Stephen, born 1763. 9. Jonathan, born 1765. 10. Anselm, of whom further. 11. Isaac, born Oct. 28, 1770, died 1779.

\*She was a descendant of Richard Bourne, of Plymouth Colony, who exercised an influence over the Massachusetts Indians similar to that of Sir William Johnson over the Six Nations of New York. Barnstable Records, page 107, say that he did more by the moral force which he exerted to defend the old colony than Major William Bradford did at the head of the army.



Chas. F. Bassett





## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*VI. Anselm Bassett*, son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Hall) Bassett, was born at Sandwich, July 20, 1768, and died at Lee, Massachusetts, July 14, 1837. He married, April 11, 1793, Hannah, only child of Sylvanus and Thankful (Hatch) Dymoke, of Falmouth.

*VII. Ephraim Dymoke Bassett*, son of Anselm and Hannah (Dymoke) Bassett, was born in 1798, and died in 1832. He married Eunice Ingersoll.

*VIII. Anselm Bassett*, son of Ephraim and Eunice (Ingersoll) Bassett, was born September 28, 1825, and died in 1907. He married, in 1849, Elizabeth Johnson, born in 1831, died 1912. They were the parents of Charles Franklin Bassett, of principal mention in this record.

*IX. Charles Franklin Bassett*, son of Anselm and Elizabeth (Johnson) Bassett, was born at Lee, Mass., October 9, 1862, and was educated in the public and high schools of his native town. He was born and reared on a farm, and took from his labors there lessons in industry and strength in physique that stood him in excellent stead in later years. In September, 1879, he came to New York and entered the employ of H. C. Hulbert & Company as office boy, at a salary of \$150 per annum, this firm one of the largest paper and supply houses in the country. In 1890 he was admitted to partnership, and went to Europe to represent the firm in the making of important contracts and the establishment of agencies. He was made attorney in liquidation, coupled with an interest in the long established firm of M. Plummer & Company, in 1900. In the same year he took over the business, and in association with his brother-in-law, Joseph H. Sutphin, joined it with the firm of H. C. Hulbert, under the name of Bassett & Sutphin. This firm purchased the business of B. & O. Myers in 1910.

In addition to the above activities, Mr. Bassett was deeply interested in many other enterprises. He was vice-president and chairman of the finance committee of the East River Savings Institution of New York, director of the Importers' and Traders' National Bank, trustee and member of finance, trust, and credit committee of the Franklin Trust Company of Brooklyn and New York, director and member of finance and executive committee of the Celluloid Company, director in the United States Life Insurance Company, and several other large corporations. Mr. Bassett was a member of the New York Chamber of Commerce, the New England Society in New York, and also of the Society of Colonial Wars. He was a member of the Union League Club of New York; Hamilton Club, of Brooklyn; Baltusrol Golf Club, Canoe Brook Country Club, Hyde Manor Golf Club, of which he was president, and the Down



## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Town Association. He found recreation in riding, driving, and golf. In politics he was a Republican, and in religious belief an Episcopalian. His death occurred December 20, 1916, at "Fair View," Summit, New Jersey.

Mr. Bassett married, in Brooklyn, June 14, 1893, Carolyn Beardsley Hulbert, youngest daughter of Henry Carlton Hulbert, a descendant from the same Bassett and Dymoke ancestry as her husband. Children: 1. Hulbert Dymoke, born Oct. 17, 1894; left Harvard University, where he was a student in the class of 1918, to enlist in April, 1917, in the United States Army, and until his honorable discharge from the service (Feb. 15, 1919), was a lieutenant in the Ordnance Officers' Reserve Corps, stationed in the United States Arsenal at Rock Island, Illinois. 2. Elizabeth Hulbert, born May 3, 1902.

(The Hulbert Line.)

*Hurlbut (Hulbert) Arms*—Quarterly argent and sable, in the sinister chief and dexter base a lion rampant or, over all a bend gules charged with three annulets of the third.

The English ancestor of this line was Lieutenant Thomas Hulbert, who accompanied Leon Gardner to America in 1635, for the purpose of erecting a fort at Saybrook. Attacked by the Pequots while absent from the fort, it is narrated that he made a most gallant fight, and, though severely wounded, fought his way back to the fort inch by inch. Gardner, in his account, writes: "But in our retreat I kept Thomas Hulbert, Robert Chapman, and John Spenceer still before us, we defending ourselves with our naked swords or else they had taken us all alive." Thomas Hulbert afterward settled in Wethersfield, where he died in 1673. (It is worthy of mention that the descendants of Thomas Hulbert and Robert Chapman, principals in the above encounter, were united by the marriage of Henry Carlton Hulbert and Susan R. Cooley, a direct descendant of Robert Chapman, in 1854).

*II. John*, the second son of Lieutenant Thomas, was born March 8, 1642, died August 30, 1690, having settled in Middletown, Connecticut.\*

*III. Ebenezer*, third son of John Hulbert, was born in January, 1683, died in 1766.

---

\*Through the marriage of John Hulbert, of the second generation of the Hulbert line, to Honor Treat Deming, affiliation was made with the family founded by Richard Treat, father of Governor Robert Treat, of Connecticut. John Deming and Richard Treat were two of the patentees named in the Connecticut Charter, granted by Charles II, the famous document of "Charter Oak" notoriety.





A faint, circular pencil sketch of a face, possibly a profile or a frontal view, with a cross on the forehead and a small mark on the chin.

A. Gilbert



## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*IV. Ebenezer* (2), son of Ebenezer Hulbert, was born May 6, 1725, and died in 1777.

*V. Amos*, born in Chatham, Connecticut, in 1752, died in Lee, Massachusetts, in 1835, son of Ebenezer (2) Hulbert.

*VI. Amos Geer Hulbert*, son of Amos Hulbert, was born in Wethersfield, Connecticut, in 1799, died in Lee, Massachusetts, August 6, 1884. He inherited to the full the hardy resolute character of his New England ancestry. His early boyhood was spent in Suffield, Connecticut, and he served his apprenticeship as carriage maker in Salisbury and Canaan, Connecticut. In 1820 he moved to Lee, Massachusetts, where he became prominent as a successful manufacturer, and became thoroughly identified with the growth and progress of the town. His chief characteristics were cordiality, frankness, a spirit of investigation, indomitable perseverance, and great thoroughness in all his undertakings. "In every thought, fibre, and movement," it is related to him, "he was an enthusiastic business man, yet the perfect system with which he arranged his affairs gave him ample leisure for reading and self improvement." He was in person above the medium height, but of a robust nature and erect form that gave dignity to his presence. He was remarkably vigorous for a man of his age. At the age of seventy-four he visited England and the Continent, with all of the enjoyment of middle age and with no more regard for inconveniences. He was a member of the Congregational church and led an exemplary Christian life. He married Cynthia Bassett, daughter of Anselm and Hannah (Dymoke) Bassett, uniting his line with those of such impressive lineage recorded in the foregoing pages.

*VII. Henry Carlton Hulbert*, only son of Amos Geer and Cynthia (Bassett) Hulbert, was born in Lee, Massachusetts, December 19, 1831, died April 24, 1912.

He was educated in the public schools of his native town, and completed his studies at Lee Academy, Lee, Massachusetts. Of a strong individuality and pronounced principles, he was a leader among his comrades, and at an age when most youths are enjoying school and pleasures he sought the business world, at sixteen years becoming a clerk in the store of William Taylor. A short time afterward he was offered a position in the dry goods house of Plunkett & Hulbert, of Pittsfield, and upon submitting the matter to his parents he was told that thereafter "self reliance must be his capital." His faith in his ability to succeed was justified by his rise, within three years, from errand boy to the cashiership. His ambition demanded wider fields of effort and he determined to try his fortunes in the metropolis of New York. He was cautioned by his father, with whom he





consulted, that not more than ten in one hundred were able to wrest success from the city, and his reply was "I propose to be one of the ten."

In February, 1851, at the age of nineteen years, he went to New York, provided with letters of recommendation to several firms, among them Cyrus W. Field & Company and White & Sheffield. Mr. Field was an old acquaintance of his father, and received the young man cordially, informing him that he had no position open at the time, but that he might use the firm's name as a city reference. He then presented his letters to White & Sheffield, importers of and extensive dealers in paper manufactures. The firm were very favorably impressed with the young man and his conduct during the interview, and Mr. Sheffield asked him what he proposed to do. His prompt reply was characteristic, and decided the interview in his favor: "If you give me a position, I propose to make myself so useful that you will give me an interest in your business." History shows how his word was kept. His salary for the first year was \$400. His previous training had been thorough and exacting, and he had been submitted to the severest discipline as errand boy, salesman, bookkeeper, and cashier, all of which was excellent equipment for his new work. He was always on the alert, and near the close of the year an opportunity presented of which he was quick to avail himself. It was the firm's custom to send account sales at the close of each quarter to the manufacturing concerns they represented, but the illness of the bookkeeper and cashier whose duty this was, made it apparently impossible that quarter. At this juncture young Hulbert offered to fill the place of the absent employee until he should be able to resume his duties, stating that he had been trained in similar work, and, being entrusted with the mission, he fulfilled it in the most efficient manner. This incident did much to impress the heads of the business with his usefulness, versatility, and willingness. Shortly afterward, another event strengthened this impression materially. There was an unfortunate rupture between the firms of White & Sheffield and Cyrus W. Field & Company, in which their relations became so strained that the letters of the former firm were returned unanswered. The matter was placed in the hands of Mr. Hulbert and he was given full powers in its settlement, which was effected in an amicable and satisfactory manner through his wise discretion and diplomacy.

In the great panic of 1857, Mr. Hulbert was sent on a western trip for the purpose of settling old and, at his discretion, opening new accounts. His experience in the main office had familiarized him with the financial conditions of the trade, knowledge he used so advantageously that full collection followed every sale he made. He had fulfilled his promise made to the firm at the time he entered their employ, and in less than four years he was given an interest in



the profits in lieu of salary. One year later, at the age of twenty-four years, he was admitted to full partnership and the firm name changed to J. B. Sheffield & Company. On the expiration of the articles of partnership, January 1, 1858, Mr. Hulbert was offered fifty per cent. advance on his interest to remain, but declined. Forming an association with Milan Hulbert, of Boston, a cousin, under the firm name of H. C. & M. Hulbert (with Otis Daniell, of Boston, as special partner for \$30,000) he at once started independent operations as an importer and dealer in paper makers' supplies, on a capital of forty thousand dollars. After completing the organization of the business, Mr. Hulbert sailed for Europe, where he secured a number of valuable exclusive agencies, some of which have been retained by his successors. Upon his return in 1858, the firm opened offices at No. 83 John Street, entering upon a career successful and profitable from the outset. Until the time of Mr. Hulbert's retirement the firm had only one reorganization, although there were several changes in the personnel. In 1862 special partner Otis Daniell sold his interest to the general partners, without security, giving them three years in which to make payment. In 1872, general partner Milan Hulbert withdrew, when the firm was reorganized as H. C. Hulbert & Company, Mr. Hulbert admitting as partners Joseph H. Sutphin and George P. Hulbert, both of whom had served a thorough apprenticeship in the business as clerks in the establishment. Mr. George P. Hulbert died in the autumn of the same year, and in 1890, Charles F. Bassett, who had grown up in the business from a boy, was admitted as a partner, and the business continued under the same firm name until May 1, 1900, when H. C. Hulbert retired and Bassett and Sutphin became his successors.

While controlling the principal interests of his own firm, Mr. Hulbert's business ability and influence have been sought in other directions. He was from 1882 to January, 1900, (when the Pullman Company purchased the assets of the Wagner Company, and when J. P. Morgan, W. K. Vanderbilt, and other Wagner directors were added to the Pullman Company board) the only New York director of the Pullman Palace Car Company, of Chicago, Illinois, and at Mr. Pullman's death, Robert Lincoln, Marshall Field and Mr. Hulbert constituted the executive committee of the company. Mr. Hulbert was also trustee and member of the finance committee of the New York Life Insurance and Trust Company, and also of the Celluloid Company. He was one of the trustees and first vice-president of the South Brooklyn Savings Institution, and for more than thirty years was a director of the Importers' and Traders' National Bank of New York, also of the United States Life Insurance Company, and one of the trustees of the Franklin Trust Company, of Brooklyn. He was a member of the New York Chamber of Commerce, life member of both the New York and Brooklyn New England Societies,



member of the Society of the Colonial Wars, and a member and chairman of the executive committee of the Brooklyn Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children. He was for many years a member of the South Congregational Church of Brooklyn, a trustee of the society and superintendent of the Sabbath school. Upon the call of his cousin, Rev. Edward P. Ingersoll, to the pastorate of the Middle Reformed Church of Brooklyn, he changed his affiliation to that church, later becoming superintendent of the Sabbath school. With the call of Dr. Ingersoll to the Puritan Church in 1882, Mr. Hulbert united with Christ Church, on Clinton Street, where he was a member of the vestry until his death.

Henry Carlton Hulbert married (first) in September, 1854, Susan R. Cooley, step-daughter of William Porter, a prominent lawyer of Lee, Massachusetts. For seven years Mrs. Hulbert was an invalid, but, regaining her health, was active in benevolent work, and for many years treasurer of the Brooklyn Industrial School and Home for Destitute Children. She died August 22, 1882. Mr. Hulbert married (second) on October 16, 1884, Fannie Dwight Bigelow, daughter of Asa Bigelow, Jr., of Brooklyn. Children of Henry Carlton Hulbert: 1. Susie Cooley, married, in 1879, Joseph H. Sutphin. 2. Carolyn Beardsley, married in 1893, Charles Franklin Bassett.

(The Dymoke Line.)

*Dymoke Arms*—Sable, two lions passant argent, crowned or.

*Crest*—A sword erect argent, hilt and pommel or.

*Motto*—*Pro rege dimico* (For the King I battle).

The alliance between the Bassett and Dymoke families was formed in the sixth generation of the former's residence in America, and in the seventh generation of the latter's. The ancient Cavalier family of Dymoke, by marriage with the heiress of the house of Marmion, became hereditary Champions of the Kings and Queens of England, it being the knightly duty of the head of the family on Coronation day to challenge to mortal combat anyone who disputed the right of the sovereign to the throne. This much-prized privilege did not necessarily descend from father to eldest son, but was granted to that member of the family who had his home at the ancient seat of the family at Scrivelsby. The honor remained in the family long after combats between armored knights had ceased, and until the custom, in more peaceful days, was omitted from the coronation ceremony.

*I. Elder Thomas Dymoke*, American founder of the following line was probably born in Pinchbeck, England, whence he came to America, dying at Barnstable, Massachusetts, in 1657-8, the date of his baptism October 7, 1604. In 1635 he was a selectman of Dorchester, Massachusetts, and in 1639 the town of Barnstable, was set



## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

off to him and others. He was a lieutenant of militia, the highest military commission in the colonies at that time, and on August 26, 1644, he was one of the witnesses with the Serunk Indian chief in what was called "The First Purchase." Three years later he was again a witness to a transaction with the Indians, this time as a signer to the Second Purchase with Chief Nepoystym.

Elder Thomas Dymoke married Ann Hammond, granddaughter of Admiral William Penn. Children: 1. Timothy, born 1639, died 1640. 2. Mehitable, baptized April 17, 1642, died August 18, 1676; married, March 30, 1662, Richard Child, of Watertown. 3. Shubail, of whom further.

*II. Ensign Shubail Dymoke*, youngest child of Elder Thomas and Ann (Hammond) Dymoke, was baptized September 15, 1644, and died at Mansfield, Connecticut, October 29, 1732, at the age of ninety-one years. He married, in April, 1663, Joanna, daughter of John Bursley. She died at Mansfield, May 8, 1727, aged eighty-three years. Children: 1. Thomas, born in April, 1664, died 1697. 2. John, of whom further. 3. Timothy, born in March, 1668. 4. Shubail, born in February, 1673, died 1728. 5. Joseph, born in September, 1675. 6. Mehitable, born in September, 1677, died 1775. 7. Benjamin, born in March, 1680. 8. Joanna, born in March, 1682. 9. Thankful, born in November, 1684.

*III. John*, second son and child of Ensign Shubail and Joanna (Bursley) Dymoke, was born in January, 1666, and married, November 16, 1689, Elizabeth Lumbert. Children: 1. Sarah, born in December, 1690. 2. Anna (Hannah), born in July, 1692; married Jabez Davis, the marriage being published March 5, 1719. 3. Mary Jane, born in 1695; married, in 1726, Benjamin Davis. 4. Theophilus, of whom further. 5. Timothy, born in July, 1698. 6. Ebenezer, born in February, 1700, died April 13, 1775. 7. Thankful, born in April, 1702. 8. Elizabeth, born April 20, 1704. 9. David, baptized in May, 1706. 10. Shubail, baptized June 22, 1707. 11. Temperance, born Jan. 10, 1710. 12. Benjamin, born in 1712-13.

*IV. Theophilus*, eldest son and fourth child of John and Elizabeth (Lumbert) Dymoke, was born in September, 1696, and died in 1760. He married, October 1, 1722, Sarah Hinkley. Children: 1. John, born about 1723. 2. David, born about 1725; married Thankful, widow of James Hatch, and had a daughter, Thankful, who married her cousin, Sylvanus Dymoke, of whom further. 3. Theophilus (2), of whom further. 4. Thomas, born 1729. 5. Ebenezer, born 1731. 6. Joseph, born 1733, died Sept. 21, 1822. He held the rank of general in the military, and married, April 17, 1759,

283

x Ambrosia b. Annville 1749 from son of John  
(David's 2nd wife 1753) and Thomas and Anne above





## BASSETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Mary Meigs. 7. Lot, born about 1737, died 1816, having held the rank of captain. 8. Sarah, born about 1740. 9. Temperance.

*V. Theophilus* (2), son of Theophilus and Sarah (Hinkley) Dymoke, was born in 1727, and died May 31, 1765. He married, November 7, 1751, his cousin, Zerviah, daughter of Jabez and Anna (Hannah) (Dymoke) Davis. Zerviah (Davis) Dymoke was born July 18, 1730, and died March 19, 1824. Children: 1. John, born about 1752. 2. Sylvanus, of whom further. 3. Anna, born in 1756, married Elnathan Nye. 4. Jabez, born in 1759, died May 22, 1825. 5. Ephraim, born about 1761. 6. Theophilus.

*VI. Sylvanus*, second son and child of Theophilus and Zerviah (Davis) Dymoke, was born in 1754, and died at Lee, Massachusetts, March 16, 1837. His father's death occurring when he was but a boy, he was reared in the home of his uncle, General Joseph Dymoke. He married Thankful, born in 1754, daughter of David and Thankful (Hatch) Dymoke, of Falmouth, the banns published March 14, 1775.

*VII. Hannah*, only child of Sylvanus and Thankful (Dymoke) Dymoke, was born January 5, 1778, and died at Lee, Massachusetts, July 26, 1853. She married, April 11, 1793, Anselm, son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Hall) Bassett, their marriage connecting two ancient and honorable family lines.





## Deming and Allied Families

*Deming Arms*—Gules, between three bucks' heads couped at the neck argent, a crescent of the last for difference.

*Crest*—A lion's head erased or.



NO positive proof of the origin of the surname Deming has ever been advanced. Different explanations of its source have been found, of which the most logical is that it is a corruption of the surname Damon, itself a corruption of D'Hammond, the name of "an ancient and illustrious family which has flourished in Surrey, and Buckinghamshire in England, and at Blois and Cherbourg in France." Careful search of English registers and records failed to reveal any mention of Deming, which shows that the surname as now spelled in this country is a distinctively American rendition of an early English surname. Deming, Demmon, Demon, Deman, Dement, Deminge, Demyng, and numerous other variations appear in New England Colonial records. The Demings in America trace from several progenitors, between whom no relationship has been discovered. John Deming, founder of the family herein under consideration, is of record in Wethersfield, Connecticut, in 1641. Other founders were Thomas Deman, of Hartford; Thomas Demond, of Fairfield; and John Demmon, of Killingsworth, Connecticut. The family has figured honorably in the history of several parts of New England, and the name is an honored one in this section of the country.

*I. John Deming*, immigrant ancestor, was a native of England. The exact date of his coming to America is not known. Some authorities advance the belief that he was one of the pioneer settlers of Wethersfield, Connecticut, when the colony was founded in 1635. Proof exists, however, that he was there in 1641, when he recorded his homestead as a house, a barn, and five acres of land, bounded by High street, west, the Great Meadow, east, Thomas Standish's homestead, north, and Richard Crabbe's homestead, south. John Deming became a man of much prominence in the community, and on March 2, 1642, was one of the jury of the "particular court." On December 1, 1645, he was among the deputies chosen to represent Wethersfield, as Jo. Demon. In 1656 he again filled the office, and his name this time is entered as John Dement. In the same year he was appointed one of a committee, "to give the best safe advice they can to the Indians." On May 21, 1657, he was a deputy to the General Court as John Deming, and the next year as John Dement. He



## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

was deputy at different courts until 1667, and was also a litigant in several lawsuits. He is one of those named in the famous charter granted by King Charles to the original founders and to those who should afterwards become associated with them in the lands of Connecticut, "in free and common socage." He was among the first to obtain a lot across the river from Wethersfield, and within the boundaries of the town, on the "Naubuc Farms," afterward incorporated into the town of Glastonbury. He obtained it in the year 1640, when he appears in the records as John Demion. It is highly probable that he never lived there, for he had a house in Wethersfield in 1641, and sold the land on the east side of the river to Samuel Wyllis before 1668. John Deming also owned land in Eastbury, for which he was taxed in 1673. He became a freeman in 1669, with John Deming, Jr., and Jonathan Deming. He bought much land in Wethersfield at different times, and disposed of it largely by deed to his sons before his death. On February 3, 1692, he signed a codicil to his will, and this is the last recorded act of his life. He died soon afterward, though his will was not proved until November 21, 1705. There is no record of the dates of birth of his children, whose names have been taken from his will. His home lot with everything on it he bequeathed to his son Samuel. To his son David he left all the materials and tools in his shop. To other children he left money and movable property. He appointed his son Samuel executor. His will shows that John Deming was a man of considerable property and that he also had a trade. David Deming, who received his father's tools, was a rope maker, but it does not necessarily follow that the father pursued the same trade. Eunice and Sarah Standish, mentioned in his will as cousins, were the daughters of Thomas Standish, whose land adjoined Deming's. The connection of this family with that of Captain Miles Standish has not been found.

John Deming was undoubtedly a prominent figure in the affairs of the Connecticut Colony. Trumbull speaks of him as one of "the fathers of Connecticut," and Hinman says that "he held the office of constable in Wethersfield in 1654," which shows that he possessed the full confidence of the governor. His name appears on the records of the colony with the prefix Mr., a courtesy paid only to men of considerable prominence. It is said that he was a representative at fifty sessions of the General Court. John Deming married Honor Treat, daughter of Richard Treat.

*II. Jonathan Deming*, son of John and Honor (Treat) Deming, was born about 1639, in Wethersfield, Connecticut, and there died after a lifelong residence in the town, on January 8, 1700, aged about sixty-one years. He was a prosperous farmer, and respected member of the community. Jonathan Deming married (first) November 21, 1660, Sarah Graves, daughter of George Graves, who died June



## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

5, 1668, in Wethersfield. He married (second) December 25, 1673, in Wethersfield, Elizabeth Gilbert, daughter of Josiah and Elizabeth Gilbert, born March 28, 1654, and died September 8, 1714.

*III. Charles Deming*, son of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Gilbert) Deming, was born in Wethersfield, on January (or June) 10, 1681. Captain Charles Deming was a shipmaster, or "mariner," as he is called in the early records. His home was in Needham, near Boston, and he left a valuable estate. His will, dated February 1, 1740, names his children, with the exception of Elizabeth, who had perhaps died before that time. Captain Deming married (first) September 5, 1706, in Wethersfield, Anna Wickham, daughter of Thomas and Mary Wickham; she was born January 2, 1684, and died in June, 1711, in Wethersfield. He married (second) November 5, 1713, in Boston, Massachusetts, Sarah Meers.

*IV. Jonathan (2) Deming*, son of Charles and Sarah (Meers) Deming, was born in Boston, Massachusetts, January 27, 1723, and died there May 26, 1791. He married, November 1, 1770, Esther Edes, who was born June 18, 1739, died August 30, 1792, daughter of Hon. Peter and Esther (Hall) Edes. (See Edes IX).

*V. Charles (2) Deming*, son of Jonathan (2) and Esther (Edes) Deming, was born March 6, 1774, in Needham, Massachusetts. In early life he was a resident of Needham, later removing to Brighton, Massachusetts, where he conducted "The Bull's Head Tavern." In middle life he removed to Marlboro, New Hampshire, and at a later date to Fitzwilliam. He became a leader in the Masonic order in Fitzwilliam, and was one of the foremost citizens of the town in his day. He died in Needham, Massachusetts, December 27, 1817.

On July 24, 1792, he married in Needham, Massachusetts, Mehitable Fuller, who was born June 5, 1777, and died September 5, 1867, daughter of Moses and Elizabeth (Newell) Fuller. Their children were: 1. Jonathan Edes, born Nov. 11, 1793, died Nov. 7, 1815; unmarried. 2. Esther, born June 29, 1795; married Charles Dana, and died April 25, 1879. 3. Charles, born Aug. 21, 1796, died Aug. 27, 1796. 4. Anne, born Feb. 17, 1798; married, Jan. 31, 1830, Samuel Foss Barker, of Lubec, Maine, and died Nov. 21, 1876. 5. Charles, born June 13, 1799; married Elizabeth Sawyer, and died May 8, 1857. 6. Mary, born Dec. 18, 1800; married, Nov. 19, 1826, John Gardiner Faxon, and died June 11, 1883. 7. Elizabeth Fuller, born May 23, 1802, died Sept. 15, 1831, unmarried. 8. William, born Feb. 21, 1804. 9. Isaac, born Sept. 2, 1805. 10. Adeline, born April 14, 1808, died Aug. 30, 1809. 11. Adeline Townsend, born July 5, 1810; married, Sept. 8, 1824, Cyrus Balkam, and died March 8, 1883. 12. Sarah Fuller, mentioned below. 13. Francis, born April 20, 1814;





## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

married Elizabeth Noble, and died March 5, 1858, in Naples, Italy, leaving one daughter, Elizabeth Deming, who married Stephen Fuller, of Charlestown, Massachusetts.

*VI. Sarah Fuller Deming*, daughter of Charles (2) and Mehitabel (Fuller) Deming, was born in Needham, Massachusetts, August 24, 1812. She married, on May 27, 1835, Amos De Forest Lockwood. (See Lockwood VII, in "Americana," April, 1919).

(The Fuller Line.)

The American Fullers spring from several unrelated progenitors. Samuel Fuller, with his brother, Edward Fuller, was a passenger on the *Mayflower*, and among the pioneer settlers of Plymouth. Matthew Fuller, their brother, followed at a later date. Still later came others of the name, among them Thomas Fuller, of Dedham, founder of the family herein under consideration, and Thomas Fuller, of Woburn. All of these early founders were Englishmen of substance, and a large proportion of them took active and prominent parts in the early affairs of the towns in which they settled.

The surname Fuller is of the occupative class, and of very ancient date. It signifies literally "the fuller," i. e., the cloth-bleacher or felter, and appears in medieval English records first with the prefix *le*, which later fell into disuse. Various persons named Fuller have won distinction in England and in America. Nicholas Fuller, born in 1557, was a distinguished Oriental scholar; another Nicholas Fuller, a noted lawyer and member of Parliament, died in 1620; Isaac Fuller, noted painter, died in 1672; Andrew Fuller, born in 1754, was an eminent Baptist minister and writer; Thomas Fuller, English divine and author, born in 1608, was chaplain extraordinary to Charles II., and a prolific writer. It was said of him: "Fuller was incomparably the most sensible, the least prejudiced great man of an age that boasted a galaxy of great men." Sarah Margaret Fuller, marchioness of Ossobi, born in 1810, was a prominent American teacher, editor and author. Melville W. Fuller, born in 1833, distinguished as a jurist, served as chief justice of the United States.

*I. Thomas Fuller*, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Needham family of the name, was born in England, but the exact date of his coming to America is not known. He was a resident of Dedham at an early date, and evidently was a man of considerable prominence in the early settlement. He represented Dedham in the Massachusetts General Court in 1673, 1679 and 1686, and died September 28, 1690. Thomas Fuller married Hannah Flower, who was born in England. Among their children was John, mentioned below.

*II. John Fuller*, son of Thomas and Hannah (Flower) Fuller,



## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

was born December 28, 1645, and died October 10, 1718. He owned lands in what is now Needham, at Purch Plain and Purch Meadow. On January 18, 1672, he married Joanna Gay, who was born April 23, 1649, in Dedham, daughter of John and Joanna Gay, who came to America about 1630, settling first at Watertown; John Gay was later one of the founders of Dedham.

*III. Robert Fuller*, son of John and Joanna (Gay) Fuller, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, August 11, 1685. He inherited lands in Needham from his father, and lived on what is now Forest street. In 1735 he built a new house on Forest street, which was the home of his grandson, Moses, and was among the oldest houses in the town. Robert Fuller married (first) Mary ———, who died March 7, 1719. He married (second) July 6, 1721, Sarah Mills.

*IV. Lieutenant Robert (2) Fuller*, son of Robert (1) and Mary Fuller, was born in Needham, Massachusetts, June 6, 1714. He was a life-long resident of the town, prominent in local affairs, and active in the militia, in which he held the rank of lieutenant. He married Sarah Eaton, who was born August 24, 1713, and died July 10, 1797, daughter of William and Mary (Starr) Eaton. Lieutenant Robert Fuller died in Needham, May 12, 1788.

*V. Moses Fuller*, son of Lieutenant Robert (2) and Sarah (Eaton) Fuller, was born April 29, 1750, in Needham, Massachusetts, and lived there all his life in the house built by his grandfather, Captain Robert Fuller, in 1735. He was a well known citizen of Needham, active in public affairs in the town.

On April 14, 1774, he married Elizabeth Newell, who was born February 22, 1754, daughter of Ebenezer and Elizabeth Newell. She died on November 29, 1834, in Weston, Massachusetts, aged eighty years. Their children were: 1. Elizabeth, born 1775, died 1778. 2. Mehitable, mentioned below. 3. Elizabeth, born July 13, 1779. 4. Moses, born March 21, 1785. 5. Mary, born March 25, 1788. 6. Hervey, born Oct. 16, 1790. 7. Stephen Palmer, born Feb. 10, 1794. 8. Louisa, born June 25, 1798. Moses Fuller died in Needham, Feb. 13, 1823, aged seventy-two years.

*VI. Mehitable Fuller*, daughter of Moses and Elizabeth (Newell) Fuller, was born June 5, 1777, at Needham, Massachusetts. On July 24, 1792, she married Charles Deming, of Needham, and died September 5, 1867. They were the parents of Sarah Fuller Deming, who became the wife of Amos De Forest Lockwood. (See Deming V and VI).



## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Edes Line.)

The surname Edes is of baptizmal origin, signifying literally "Ede's son." Although the feminine fontname Ede is now obsolete, it has made a most remarkable impression on the directories of English speaking peoples. Until the seventeenth century it lingered in England as a personal name. Every imaginable variant of the surname is found. Beyond doubt, the name occasionally had its source in a nickname of Edward or Edmund, but the first derivation must be looked upon as absolutely decisive in the case of the great majority.

Edes families have flourished in England for six centuries. The American family of the name is a branch of an ancient English family of County Essex. John Edes, the immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was a lineal descendant of Henry Edes, Gentleman, a large land owner of Bocking, County Essex. The family in America, though small, has figured honorably in the history of several towns of Massachusetts.

*I. Henry Edes*, of Bocking, County Essex, England, must be regarded as the English progenitor, since it is not possible to trace beyond him accurately.

*II. Henry (2) Edes*, son of Henry (1) Edes, was the administrator of his father's estate. He was the grandfather of Rev. John Edes, mentioned below.

*IV. Rev. John Edes*, great-grandson of Henry (1) Edes, was graduated at St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1610, with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. In 1614 he took his master's degree. For forty-one years he was rector of the church at Lawford, where he died April 12, 1658. A monument to his memory was erected by the town.

*V. John (2) Edes*, son of Rev. John (1) Edes, was the father of the American emigrant. He was a resident of Lawford.

*VI. John (3) Edes*, son of John (2) Edes, was born in Lawford, County Essex, England, March 31, 1651. He came to America before 1674, when he married Mary Tufts, daughter of Peter Tufts; she was born June 15, 1655, and was the mother of John, mentioned below. John Edes served in the Indian Wars of 1675. He was a resident of Cambridge, Massachusetts.

*VII. John (4) Edes*, son of John (3) and Mary (Tufts) Edes, was baptized at Cambridge, Massachusetts, June 26, 1680, and died of smallpox, January 16, 1721. He was a resident of Cambridge,



## DEMING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and married there, April 13, 1698, Grace Lawrence, daughter of George and Elizabeth Lawrence, who was admitted to the Cambridge church, July 20, 1718, and died August 9, 1758. Grace (Lawrence) Edes was born June 3, 1680. Her father, George Lawrence, was born about 1637, and settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, where he died March 21, 1709. He married (first) September 29, 1657, Elizabeth Crispe, daughter of Benjamin Crispe, founder of the family in America, who was born in 1611, and came to America in 1629; he was one of the original proprietors of Watertown, Massachusetts; Elizabeth (Crispe) Edes died May 28, 1681, and George Lawrence married (second) August 16, 1691, Elizabeth Holland.

*VIII. Peter Edes*, son of John (4) and Grace (Lawrence) Edes, was born September 15, 1705, probably in Charlestown, Massachusetts, and lived there and in Cambridge, where he followed the occupation of latter. On December 18, 1729, he married Esther Hall, who was born December 27, 1700, daughter of Stephen and Grace (Willis) Hall. Stephen Hall was the son of Widow Mary Hall, who came to this country with her two sons; he lived at Concord, Stowe and Medford, Massachusetts, and later at "Queensbucke," Connecticut. Stephen Hall, Sr., married on December 3, 1663, Ruth Davis, daughter of Dolor and Margery (Willard) Davis; her father was in Cambridge in 1634, and was one of the signers of the petition for the setting apart of the town of Groton in 1656. He had previously resided at Barnstable, where he died in 1673. He married Marjory, sister of Major Simon Willard. Their eldest child became the wife of Stephen Hall, Sr., and mother of Stephen Hall, Jr., who was born in 1667, died November 7, 1749. He married (first) about 1692, Grace Willis, daughter of Thomas and Grace (Fay) Willis, who was admitted to the church at Watertown, February 8, 1713, and died of smallpox, November 19, 1721. Their daughter, Esther Hall, became the wife of Peter Edes. Peter Edes was a prominent figure in the affairs of Massachusetts prior to the American Revolution, and was a member of the committee of correspondence at Harvard in 1773. Esther (Hall) Edes died June 14, 1756, and he married (second) November 26, 1761, Anna Haskell. He died at Harvard, January 25, 1787.

*IX. Esther Edes*, daughter of Peter and Esther (Hall) Edes, was born June 18, 1739. On November 1, 1770, she married Jonathan Deming. (See Deming IV).





## Duer and Allied Families

*Duer Arms*—Ermine, a bend gules.

*Crest*—A dove and olive branch argent.

*Motto*—*Esse et vider.*



HE Duer family has been prominent in the judicial, naval and military history of the Middle Atlantic States since the year 1768, when the immigrant ancestor, Colonel William Duer, came to America from England.

*I. Colonel William Duer* was born in England, March 18, 1747, the son of John and Frances (Frye) Duer. After having served under Lord Clive in India, Colonel Duer returned to England, and shortly afterwards departed for the colonies in America. He purchased land on the Hudson river, where he established himself, and became one of the Indian Commissioners just before the outbreak of the American Revolution. He was also commissary for New York, and a member of the Committee of Safety previous to the outbreak of hostilities between the colonies and the mother country. When war came, however, he joined the colonists and entered the army, in which he held the rank of colonel. He died May 17, 1799.

Colonel Duer married Catherine Alexander, daughter of Maj.-Gen. William and Sarah (Livingston) Alexander. Maj.-Gen. Alexander was a member of the King's Council for the Colony of New York and New Jersey before the Revolution, after which he became a major-general in the American army. The wedding was performed at Baskingridge, New Jersey, the home of the bride. General George Washington gave the bride away, and the ceremony was performed by his own chaplain, the Rev. Mr. Armstrong. Colonel Duer was a brother-in-law of the Hon. George Rose, the friend and correspondent of Pope, and whose eldest son, Lord Strathnairne, was one of the heroes of the Crimean War. The children of Colonel Duer and Catherine Alexander were: 1. William Alexander Duer, one of the first midshipmen of the United States Navy. He left the sea at an early age and studied law. He assisted Edward Livingston in the framing of the famous State Constitution, known as the Louisiana Code, and since that time used as the frame and standard for the constitution of each State entering the Union. He was appointed judge of the Third Circuit Court of New York, and in 1830 was elected to the presidency of Columbia College of New York. 2. John Duer, judge and eminent jurist; his books are even now recognized and used as text books on the laws of New York



## DUER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

State. 3. Francis Duer. 4. Sarah Henrietta. 5. Catherine Alexander. 6. Maria Theodora. 7. Henrietta Elizabeth. 8. Alexander.

*II. William Alexander Duer, LL. D.*, son of Colonel William and Catherine (Alexander) Duer, was born September 8, 1780, and died May 30, 1858. He married, September 11, 1806, Hannah Maria Denning, daughter of William and Amy (Hawxhurst) Denning. She died July 17, 1862. Their children were: 1. Henrietta, born 1808; died September 18, 1824. 2. Frances Maria, born December 24, 1809; married April 7, 1836, Henry Sheaf Hoyt. 3. Catherine Theodora, born Dec. 24, 1811; died June 3, 1877. 4. William Denning, mentioned below. 5. Eleanor Jones, born Feb. 6, 1814; married, May 17, 1838, George Templar Wilson; died Nov. 11, 1892. 6. Edward A., born 1815; died in 1831. 7. Sarah Henderson, born Jan. 28, 1817; died August 5, 1856. 8. Lieutenant-Commander John King, born Dec. 26, 1818; died June 14, 1859; married, Sept. 21, 1841, George Anna Huyler. 9. Elizabeth Denning, born July 25, 1821; married, May 8, 1845, Archibald Gracie King; died March 21, 1897. 10. Charlotte Lueretia, born May 28, 1828; died Jan. 8, 1832.

*III. William Denning Duer*, son of William Alexander and Hannah Maria (Denning) Duer, was born December 6, 1812. He married, May 8, 1837, Caroline King, daughter of James Gore King. Their children were: 1. Sarah Gracie. 2. Edward Alexander; married, April 26, 1870, Anna Van Buren, daughter of John Van Buren. 3. James G. K., married, June 2, 1864, Elizabeth, daughter of Orlando Meads. 4. Lieutenant Commander Rufus King Duer, United States Navy, died at sea, June 28, 1869. 5. Amy Hawxhurst. 6. William Alexander, married, May 24, 1877, Ellin Travers, daughter of William Travers. 7. Denning Duer (2nd), mentioned below.

*IV. Denning Duer*, the son of William and Caroline (King) Duer, was born September 15, 1850, in Weehawken, New Jersey. He received his early education in the public schools of Weehawken, and after completing the course of study offered there, he embarked on a business career as a stock broker in New York City. He was a man with keen business talent, and succeeded admirably in this venture in which he remained for several years. In addition to his business ability, he was also a thinker, student, and born diplomat. His recognized ability and genius in this line was instrumental in securing him an appointment from President Arthur in 1881 as Consul at Lisbon, Portugal. He rendered valuable services in this important position, and his worth was recognized to such an extent that he was retained in the consular service by the succeeding administration, that of President Cleveland. During this administra-



tion he was United States Consul at Antwerp, Holland, and was later identified in an official capacity with the consulate in London.

To travel and live abroad among foreign peoples is an education than which there is none more broadening, and complete. Contact daily with customs differing in their essentials from those to which one has been accustomed, is bound to effect in the mind of a man a deep understanding and sympathy with human nature, a sort of divine tolerance. These qualities Mr. Duer had in abundance, and in consequence possessed friends all over the world. Upon quitting the diplomatic service he returned to America and settled in New Haven, Connecticut, where he resided for the remainder of his life. After his retirement from official life, Mr. Duer did not again actively enter the business world, though he still continued and did till the end of his life take a keen and active interest in almost every phase of life in the city of New Haven. The same qualities which had made him a successful business man and a more successful consul, made his advice sought by some of the most influential men of the city, whose friend he was.

On February 12, 1874, Mr. Duer married Louise Suydam, of Babylon, Long Island, New York, a daughter of Henry L. and Phoebe (Higbie) Suydam. Her mother died when Mrs. Duer was five years of age, and she made her home thereafter with her aunt and uncle, Ferdinand and Caroline (Whitney) Suydam, of New York. (See Suydam).

To Mr. and Mrs. Duer two children were born: 1. Caroline Suydam, married George Xavier McLanahan, of Washington, D. C., and is the mother of four children: Duer, Helen, Louise Suydam and George. 2. Louise, born in 1882, died in November, 1890. Mrs. Louise (Suydam) Duer survives her husband, and resides in New Haven, Connecticut. She is a member of the Colonial Dames and the Connecticut Society. A niece of Mr. Duer is the wife of the well known surgeon, Dr. Joseph Blake, of the American Hospital in Paris.

(The Suydam Line.)

*Suydam Arms*—Argent, a chevron azure between in chief two crescents gules, and in base a mullet of the last.

*Crest*—A swan in water among reeds proper.

*Motto*—*De tyd vliegt.*

The Suydam family is one of very great antiquity, dating in the Netherlands from the beginning of the eleventh century, when members of the family held extensive landed estates in Holland. Research has as yet failed to establish a connection between the American family of the name and the ancient Dutch house. Riker in his "Annals of Newtown, New York," in an extensive article devoted to the Suydam family, states that they owe their name to a custom



in vogue among the Dutch founders of families, of assuming the title of the place in Europe whence they had emigrated to America. The first ancestor of the Suydams in America was Heyndrycke Rycke or Rycken. Early Dutch colonial records inform us that he was "from Suydam," but unless either Schiedam or Saardam be intended, which is perhaps to be questioned, doubt must be raised as to the locality. From the earliest years of the New Amsterdam Colony, members of the family have rendered distinguished services to America during her several wars, and have established a reputation for stern integrity, honesty, hospitality and respectability. The family has held a place of importance socially among the old Knickerbocker families of New York, and has intermarried since the time of its founding with the foremost families of the State.

*1. Hendrick Rycken*, immigrant ancestor and founder of the Suydam family, emigrated from Holland to America in 1663, settling on the outskirts of the city of New Amsterdam, at what was then called Smith's Fly, where he purchased a house and land on the shore of the East River, in 1678. He was a blacksmith, and pursued his trade in that locality until forced to move by the continued annoyance and danger of the snakes which infested the low land in that section. This property, which he subsequently sold to Dirk Van der Cliff (after whom Cliff street, New York, took its name), was bounded by the East River, Shoemaker's land, and Maiden Lane. Hendrick Rycken had been in New York fourteen years before he purchased this property, and this transaction seems to have been the beginning of a successful career for him. In his monograph on Hendrick Rycken, the Rev. J. Howard Suydam, D. D., says:

We may imagine this house as that of a farmer, since it was located at a distance from the built-up portion of the city. If so, it was a wooden structure, long, having a low ceiling, and a roof reaching very near to the ground. Near by there was a garden of flowers, containing many colored tulips, which at this particular period were producing a strange mania in Holland. There was also a garden of vegetables, for which the Dutch were ever famous. The milk for the family came from the cows which flourished on the sweet clover in that pasture field; and the table was never without the schnapps, or the tankard of beer. On the site of Hendrick Rycken's farm was fought the battle of Golden Hill, on January 18, 1770, which marked the first bloodshed in the American Revolution. It is usually stated by historians that the first blood was shed at Lexington, but such is not the fact. In 1678-79 he removed to Flatbush, where in April, 1679, he united with the church, with his wife Ida (Jacobs) Rycken. Rycken was one of the twenty-six patentees of the town of Flatbush, under the patent granted by Lieutenant-Governor Dongan, in 1685. He later acquired a large estate in Flatbush and other places, and assumed a place of prominence in the life and affairs of that locality. The family ranked high among the proud old Dutch families of the day.

Hendrick Rycken died in 1701. In his will he enjoins upon his wife a careful attention to the religious education of their children. Issue: 1. Jacob. 2. Hendrick. 3. Ryck, mentioned below. 4. Ida. 5. Gertrude. 6. Jane.

It is a curious though well established fact that, about the year





1710, the sons of Hendrick Rycken adopted the surname of Suydam, and from these three are descended all the Suydams of America, whose lineage is traced to early colonial days.

*II. Ryck Rycken or Suydam*, youngest son of Hendrick and Ida (Jacobs) Rycken, was born in 1675, probably in New Amsterdam. He removed to Flatbush, and resided there, a figure of prominence in the early affairs of the settlement, until his death. From 1711 until his demise he acted repeatedly as supervisor of the town, and was also for a considerable period a judge. Ryck Suydam married twice. He died in 1741. His children were: 1. Hendrick. 2. John, mentioned below. 3. Ryck, usually called Richard, who established a branch of the family in Freehold, Monmouth county, N. J. 4. Ida. 5. Anna. 6. Gertrude. 7. Jane. 8. Christiana. 9. Mary.

*III. John Suydam*, son of Ryck Suydam, was born in Flatbush, New York, and resided in Flatbush and in Brooklyn throughout his life. He died in Brooklyn, about the close of the American Revolution. His children were: 1. Ryck. 2. Ferdinand. 3. Hendrick, mentioned below. 4. Rynier. 5. Maria.

*IV. Hendrick Suydam*, son of John Suydam, was born in New York, in 1736. Prior to the Revolution he removed to Hallett's Cove, Long Island, and bought the mill on Sunswick creek, which he conducted during the rest of his life. He was one of the foremost citizens of Hallett's Cove, and was for many years an elder of the Dutch church in Newtown. A contemporary tribute to him, which gives an insight into his life and character, states that "urbanity of manners, . . . hospitality without grudging, characterized his life. He lived esteemed, loved, revered." From this we may draw a clear picture of him as representative of the finest type of Dutch gentleman and planter of his day, living a useful life on his broad well-cared-for acres, dispensing hospitality and good cheer with a lavish hand, after the fashion of the Knickerbocker patriarchs whom Washington Irving has immortalized.

Hendrick Suydam was thrice married; (first) August 30, 1762, to Letitia Sebring, who died February 14, 1765. He married (second) Harmtie Lefferts, who died childless. His third wife, whom he married, August 3, 1770, was Phebe Skidmore, daughter of Samuel Skidmore. She died April 11, 1832, at the advanced age of eighty-seven years. He died February 9, 1818, aged eighty-one years.

*V. Ferdinand Suydam*, son of Hendrick and Phebe (Skidmore) Suydam, was born at Hallett's Cove, Newtown, New York, September 13, 1786. He passed the early years of his life on his father's estate at Newtown, but removed to New York City, where he en-



## DUER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

gaged in mercantile pursuits later in life. He died at Buffalo, New York, March 23, 1851, and was buried in the vault of Trinity Church, New York. He was well known in business, and financial circles in New York City. Mr. Suydam was a member of Trinity parish. His home at No. 3 Bowling Green, New York, stood on the site of the present Custom House.

He married, October 21, 1810, Eliza Underhill, daughter of Anthony Lispenard and Clarina (Bartow) Underhill, who was born in New York City, November 8, 1788, and died there June 16, 1844. (See Underhill VI).

*VI. Henry Lispenard Suydam*, son of Ferdinand and Eliza (Underhill) Suydam, was born November 7, 1813, in New York City. He resided in Babylon, Long Island, a well known citizen there, living the life of a retired gentleman. He was a man of culture and of quiet, scholarly tastes. He married Phoebe Higbie, and died at Babylon, Long Island, where he was buried, October 25, 1879. Henry Lispenard and Phoebe (Higbie) Suydam, were the parents of one child: Louise, mentioned below.

*VII. Louise Suydam*, daughter of Henry Lispenard and Phoebe (Higbie) Suydam, was born August 17, 1853, at Babylon, Long Island. She married, February 12, 1874, at New York City, Rev. Carter officiating, Denning Duer, who was born September 15, 1850, at Weehawken, New Jersey, son of Denning and Caroline (King) Duer, of New York. Mrs. Duer resides at No. 691 Whitney avenue, New Haven, Connecticut, and is well known in the more conservative of the social circles of the city. Mr. and Mrs. Duer were the parents of two children: 1. Caroline Suydam, born in 1876, married George Xavier McLanahan, of Washington, D. C., where she now resides. 2. Louise, born in 1882, died in November, 1890.

(The Underhill Line.)

*Underhill Arms*—Argent a chevron sable between three trefoils slipped vert.  
*Crest*—On a mount vert a hind lodged or.

The Underhill family in America dates from the year 1630, when Captain John Underhill, its founder, came to America. Since the time of the early Dutch settlements in New Amsterdam, and along the Hudson river, in what is now the State of New York, the old Westchester country has been the home of descendants of the pioneer Underhills. The family has been prominent in official life in this section of New York since the middle of the seventeenth century. Captain John Underhill, the progenitor, was a man of culture, considerable wealth according to the standards of the day, whose progeny have never relinquished the prestige and prominence of the



earlier generations of the family in the affairs of New York. The Underhills intermarried with some of the foremost of the old Dutch and English families of New York, among them the Suydams.

*I. Captain John Underhill*, immigrant ancestor and founder, came to America in 1630, settling first on Long Island. He was a man of excellent education, evidently a keen observer and scholar, for in 1638 he published his "Newes from America." This valuable comment on the life and manners of the times has been preserved and printed in book form by his descendants, and is among the most interesting documents which come down to us from early New York. Captain John Underhill was a prosperous planter and farmer, and after a short period became one of the leading figures in the affairs of Matinneckock. He died in 1672, and was buried in the Underhill burying ground at Matinneckock (Locust Valley) Long Island. Captain Underhill married Elizabeth Feke, daughter of Robert Feke (or Feak). They were the parents of several children, among them Nathaniel, mentioned below.

*II. Nathaniel Underhill*, son of Captain John and Elizabeth (Feke) Underhill, was born on Long Island, February 22, 1663, and passed the early years of his life at the home of his parents on Long Island. He removed later to Westchester county, New York, and was the founder of the Westchester branch of the family. He was a farmer on a large scale there, and one of the leading men of the surrounding country. Nathaniel Underhill married Mary Ferris, December 2, 1685; she was the daughter of John and Mary Ferris. He died November 10, 1710, and was buried in the old burying ground on the Lorillard Spencer estate in Westchester. Nathaniel and Mary (Ferris) Underhill were the parents of seven children, of whom Nathaniel, mentioned below, was the second.

*III. Nathaniel (2) Underhill*, son of Nathaniel (1) and Mary (Ferris) Underhill, was born August 11, 1690. He resided in Westchester, New York, in what is now Williamsbridge, and was prominent and active in the affairs of the county. In 1720 he held the office of trustee of the town of Westchester, and in 1772 was its mayor. Nathaniel Underhill married, April 19, 1711, Mary Hunt, who was born July 22, 1692, daughter of John and Phebe (Seaman) Hunt. He died November 27, 1775, at the age of eighty-five years, and was buried on the Lorillard Spencer estate at Williamsbridge, New York. His will, dated December 1, 1775, is recorded in the surrogate's office, New York.

*IV. Israel Underhill*, son of Nathaniel and Mary (Hunt) Underhill, was born in Westchester, New York, September 10, 1732, and resided in New Rochelle, New York. He was prominent in official



affairs in New Rochelle, and was active in the militia, holding the rank of ensign. He was a member of the Protestant Episcopal church, and in 1784 was a trustee in St. Peter's Church. In 1787 he held the office of supervisor, and in 1803 was trustee of Lady's Seminary and Boys' School at West Farms, New York. He was a pewholder for several years in St. Paul's Church, at Eastchester, New York.

Israel Underhill married, March 4, 1761 (license granted by the Secretary of the Province of New York), Abigail Lispenard, daughter of Anthony and Maria (Milburne) Lispenard, and a member of the noted Lispenard family of New York. She was born December 4, 1739, and died February 3, 1806, and was buried on the Lorillard Spencer estate. Israel Underhill died September 23, 1806, at the age of seventy-four years, and was also buried on the Lorillard Spencer estate. His will, probated in 1807, is recorded in the surrogate's office, White Plains, New York.

*V. Anthony Lispenard Underhill*, son of Israel and Abigail (Lispenard) Underhill, was born December 30, 1763. He removed to New York, and resided there during the greater part of his life, on Dey street, first at what is now No. 31, later at 41-44, in 1827, removing from the latter house to No. 28 Cortlandt street. He was one of the foremost merchants and public men of New York of his day, an alderman of the city in 1817 and 1818; 1814-15-16 he held the office of assistant alderman. In 1826-27 he was president of the Fulton Fire Insurance Company of New York. Anthony L. Underhill was a member of Trinity Church, New York, and was a pewholder in St. Peter's at Westchester, New York.

Anthony Lispenard Underhill married, July 4, 1783, Clarina Bartow, who was born March 4, 1769, the daughter of Basil and Clarina Bartow, of Westchester, New York. She died July 9, 1836, and was buried at Eastern Shore, Maryland, on the Dr. Sykes farm. He died July 18, 1847, at Saratoga Springs, New York, and was buried in Trinity vault, Trinity Church, New York.

*VI. Eliza Underhill*, daughter of Anthony Lispenard and Clarina (Bartow) Underhill, was born November 8, 1788, at No. 31 Dey street, New York City. She married October 21, 1810, Ferdinand Suydam, who was born September 13, 1786, at Hallett's Cove, Newtown, New York, the son of Hendrick and Phebe (Skidmore) Suydam. He died at Buffalo, New York, March 23, 1851, and was buried in Trinity vault, Trinity Church, New York, of which parish he and his wife were members. Mr. and Mrs. Suydam resided at No. 3 Bowling Green, New York, on the site of the present Custom House in New York City. Eliza Underhill Suydam died at her home in New York City, June 16, 1844, and was buried in Trinity vault.





## Delano-Hitch Families

*Delano Arms*—Argent, three lions rampant vert, armed and langued gules.

*Crest*—Out of a crown or, the head and neck of a unicorn argent, attired and crined of the first.



THE descendants of the Pilgrim ancestor, Philip Delano, of Plymouth, have the satisfaction of tracing their ancestry in the old country for a dozen centuries. They have established the full right to bear the arms of the Delano family, which could be of no better stock and which embraces a host of distinguished men in its numbers. The name is derived from the town of Lannoy, a few miles from Isle, now Lille, France. Away back in A. D. 863 this town was called Alnetum, later L'Annois and Lannoy. The meaning of the word is unknown. It has been spelled L'Annois, L'Annoe, L'Aulmais, L'Aulnoy, but more often Alnetum. Today Lannoy is a small manufacturing town, seven miles from Lille, with a population at the last census of one thousand, nine hundred and four. The first Lord of Lannoy, progenitor of the family, was Hugues de Lannoy, mentioned as a knight of Tournai d'Auelin in 1096. On the same list was Simon de Alneto. A Chartre des Chanoines (cannons) de St. Pierre a Lille mentions Gilbert de Lannoy in 1171, and Hugues de Lannoy is mentioned in 1186. It is impossible to present in this place an extended history of the family in its early days in France. That has been done with remarkable care and apparent accuracy in the genealogy, which is authority for all said here about the origin and early history of the family. There seems to be no flaw in the following pedigree in the direct male line of the American emigrant, Philip Delano or Delanoy:

1. Arnulphe de Franchmont. 2. Conrad de Franchmont. 3. Hellin, Marquis de Franchmont, married Agnes, daughter of Othon, Duke of Bavaria. 4. Hellin de Franchmont, married Agnis de Duras. 5. Jean de Franchmont, married Mahienne de Lannoy. 6. Hugues de Lannoy. 7. Hugues de Lannoy. 8. Guillebert de Lannoy. 9. Baudoin "Le Begue." 10. Vaudoin. 11. Philippe. 12. Jean, born about 1511, died May 25, 1560; was made Chevalier de la Roison d'Or in 1546; Chamberlain to the Emperor Charles V., from 1519 to 1556; Governor of Haymont and Captain-general of same province of Flanders in 1559; married Jeanne de Ligne de Barbancon, daughter of Louis de Ligne, Seigneur de Barbancon, and his wife Marie de Berghes. 13. Gysbert de Lannoy, born at Tourcoing, 1545, of Roman Catholic parents, but became a Protestant and was disinherited by his father. 14. Jean of Leyden, was born 1570, died at Leyden, 1604. He married at the Walloon Church (Tornai), January 13, 1596, Marie la Mahieu, of Brabant family. 15. Philip, the American emigrant, (see forward).

It is shown that the Delanoy family for all these centuries re-



## DELANO-HITCH FAMILIES

maintained pure Norman and Flemish blood, never intermarrying with the French race.

The following lines of descent show some of the royal ancestors of Philip Delano.

1. Huolf, first Duke of the Normans, a Viking, A. D. 860. 2. William Longsword, Duke of the Normans. 3. Richard, the Fearless. 4. Richard, the Good. 5. Robert I., the Devil. 6. William the Conqueror, King of England, Duke of Normandy. 7. Henry I., "Beauclerc." 8. Matilda, married Geoffrey Plantagenet. 9. Henry II., King of England, 1154 to 1189. 10. Matilda, married Henry V., Duke of Saxony and Bavaria. 11. Henry VI., married Agnes, daughter of Conrad, son of Frederick I., a descendant of Alfred the Great (849), Cedric (495), and other ancient English noble and royal personages. 12. Agnes, married Otho, Duke of Bavaria. 13. Agnes, married Hellin de Franchmont. 14. Hellin (2). 15. Jean de Franchmont, born about 1300. 16. Hugues de Lannoy, born 1311, died 1349, previously mentioned.

The line of Philip Delano is traced to Charlemagne and his ancestors to the year A. D. 1611, viz.:

1. St. Arnoul (611). 2. Ansegise, A. D., 679. 3. Pepin Le Gros, 714. 4. Charles Martel, Duke of the Franks, 741. 5. Pepin, "the Short," King of France, 768. 6. Emperor Charlemagne, 800. 7. Pepin, King of Italy. 8. Bernard, King of Italy. 9. Pepin (2). 10. Pepin, Comte de Vermandois. 11. Beatrix, married Robert, Duke of France. 12. Hugues the Great. 13. Hugues Capet, King of France. 14. Robert, the Saint, King of France. 15. Alix de France, married Boudouin, fifth Count of Flanders. 16. Judith, married Guelph, Duke of Bavaria. 17. Henry III. 18. Henry IV. 19. Henry V. 20. Henry VI., where the line connects with the one previous.

Another pedigree connects Philip Delano with Priam, King of France, in 382, and still another with Guelph, Prince of the Seyrri, A. D. 476. Of course, the royal ancestors of any family are legion in case any connection is established, for the constant intermarriages connect the ruling families of all nations to some extent. The royal and some of the noble family genealogies are available, of course. The name appeared at Plymouth as de la Noye, but the English-speaking and English-writing people of the colony very quickly consolidated the three syllables and dropped the last two letters, this making the present form of the name Delano. In the early records of New England it appears as Dillanoe, Dillnoe, Dilnow, Dillno and Delanoy. At the present date people are found in Vermont who pronounce it Dilnow.

*I. Philip Delano* was born in Leyden, Holland, 1602, and baptized there 1603. The Delano family went to Leyden to escape persecution in France, where the Catholic party was in power and the Inquisition active. They were French Protestants, or Huguenots. Philip grew up under the teachings of the Separatists of the Established church of England who fled to Holland in 1608 to abide in Leyden. Thus he became affiliated with the Pilgrims, who came over on the *Mayflower*, and it is believed that he started in the first company that came to Plymouth in that vessel. He is sup-



## DELANO-HITCH FAMILIES

posed to have been in the companionship, the *Speedwell*, which sailed from Southampton for America, but had to put into Dartmouth on account of a leak. She sailed again August 31, after repairs were made, but sprung a leak once more and returned to Plymouth, England, where the voyage was abandoned and eighteen of the passengers who could not be accommodated on the *Mayflower*, including Robert Cushman, remained in England until the *Fortune* sailed next summer. At any rate, Philip Delano came to America on the ship *Fortune* in 1621, then aged nineteen years. In 1624 he had an acre of land granted him at Plymouth, but gave it up as he settled in Duxbury.

Philip Delano was admitted a freeman, January 1, 1632-33. His farm at Duxbury, granted October 2, 1637, was north and northwest of Alden's, on the north side of Stony or Mill brook, below the site of the late tack factory. It was bounded by lands of Morse Pumpas and Alden, and comprised forty acres. He was often employed in the early days as surveyor of lands, and frequently served on the grand jury, and was a volunteer in the Pequot War, June 7, 1637. He died at Bridgewater, Massachusetts, about 1681, aged seventy-nine years. The probate court was not established until 1686, and his estate was settled according to the records in the registry of deeds, July 5, 1682. He died intestate, but left a memorandum expressing his wishes and intent, and this nuncupative will was allowed July 7, 1682. He married (first) at Duxbury, December 19, 1634, Hester Dewsbery, of Duxbury. He married (second) at Duxbury, 1657, Mary (Pontus) Glass, widow of James Glass, daughter of William Pontus. The children of Philip and Hester Delano: 1. Mary, born 1635; married Jonathan Dunham. 2. Esther, born 1638. 3. Philip, Jr., born about 1640; married Elizabeth Clark. 3. Thomas (Doctor), born March 21, 1642; married Mary Alden. 4. John, born about 1644. 5. James, died unmarried. 6. Lieutenant Jonathan, of whom further. 7. Rebecca, born about 1651; married John Churchill. The only child of Philip and Mary was: Samuel, born 1659, married Elizabeth Standish.

*II. Jonathan Delano*, fifth son of Philip and Hester (Dewsbury) Delano, was born 1647, in Duxbury, and was one of the original proprietors of Dartmouth, residing in that portion which is now Fairhaven, where he died December 23, 1720. By deed of confirmation from Governor Bradford, November 13, 1694, in the right of his father in the township he became possessed of about eight hundred acres, and resided near the brook of Tuskett Hill, or Wasquatucket, where he built a mill. He served as constable, surveyor, commissioner, selectman, and was deputy from Dartmouth, in 1689. He was commissioned lieutenant, December 25, 1689, by Governor Hinkley, who had previously served as a soldier in King Philip's War,



## DELANO-HITCH FAMILIES

and was with Captain Benjamin Church at Mount Hope, when Philip's men were destroyed or captured.

He married, in Plymouth, February 28, 1678, Mercy, daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah (Walker) Warren, and granddaughter of Richard Warren of the Mayflower Colony. His first child, a daughter, died at the age of three days; others were: 1. Jonathan, born Jan. 30, 1680. 2. Jabez, born Nov. 8, 1682. 3. Sarah, born Jan. 9, 1684. 4. Mary, born Oct. 27, 1686. 5. Nathan, born Oct. 29, 1688. 6. Bethiah, born Nov. 29, 1690. 7. Susanna, born Sept. 3, 1693. 8. A son died at birth. 9. Nathaniel, born Oct. 29, 1695. 10. Esther, born April 4, 1698. 11. Jethro, born July 31, 1701. 12. Thomas, mentioned below.

*III. Thomas Delano*, youngest child of Jonathan and Mercy (Warren) Delano, was born May 10, 1704, in Dartmouth, where he passed his life. He married there, November 4, 1727, Jean Peckham, also born and died in Dartmouth. Children: 1. Thomas, born Aug. 12, 1729. 2. Abisha, born July 9, 1731. 3. Ephraim, mentioned below. 4. Jabez, born Feb. 4, 1734. 5. Gideon, born Sept. 25, 1736. 6. Deborah, born June 14, 1739. 7. Jean, born Dec. 3, 1743.

*IV. Captain Ephraim Delano*, third son of Thomas and Jean (Peckham) Delano, was born August 25, 1733, in Dartmouth, where he made his home, and died November 24, 1809, in Fairhaven, Massachusetts. Children: 1. Thomas, born October 16, 1761; was seized by a British fleet while fishing, and died on the Jersey prison ship in New York harbor in February, 1782. 2. Jabez, born April 27, 1763. 3. Hannah, born April 12, 1766. 4. Allerton, born Dec. 2, 1767. 5. A son, died unnamed. 6-7. Ephraim and Elizabeth (twins), born March 1, 1771. 8. Deborah, born July 26, 1773. 9. Sarah, born May 4, 1776. 10. Warren, mentioned below. 11. Temperance, born May 27, 1781.

*V. Captain Warren Delano*, youngest son of Captain Ephraim and Elizabeth (Cushman) Delano, was born October 28, 1779, in Dartmouth, and died in Fairhaven, September 25, 1866. He married (first) in Fairhaven, November 6, 1808, Deborah, daughter of Joseph and Deborah (Perry) Church, born March 21, 1783, in Dartmouth, died there August 7, 1827. He married (second) in Dartmouth, April 2, 1828, Eliza Adams, widow of Captain Parker, of the United States navy. Children: 1. Warren, mentioned below. 2. Frederic, born April 11, 1811. 3. Franklin Hughes, born July 27, 1813, married Laura, daughter of William B. and granddaughter of John Jacob Astor, of New York. 4. Louise Church, born Oct. 29, 1816. 5. Edward, born July 11, 1818. 6. Deborah





## DELANO-HITCH FAMILIES

Perry, born Aug. 15, 1820. 7. Sarah Alvey, born Aug. 15, 1822. 8. Susan Maria, born Aug. 17, 1823. 9. A daughter, died on day of birth.

*VI. Warren (2) Delano*, eldest child of Captain Warren (1) and Deborah (Church) Delano, was born July 13, 1809, in Fairhaven, and died January 17, 1898, at Newburgh, New York, at his residence called the "Algonac." He married, November 1, 1843, at Northampton, Massachusetts, Catherine Robbins, born January 10, 1825, died February 10, 1896, at Newburgh, daughter of Judge Joseph Lyman and Anne Jean (Robbins) Robbins, the last named a daughter of Hon. Edward Hutchinson Robbins, who was a Member of Congress from Massachusetts, and Speaker of the House in 1793. Children: 1. Susan Maria, born Oct. 13, 1844, in Macao, China. 2. Louise Church, born June 4, 1846, in the same place. 3. Deborah Perry, born Aug. 29, 1847, in Northampton; became the wife of William Howell Forbes, of Hong Kong, China. 4. Annie Lyman, born Jan. 8, 1849, in New York City; married Frederic Delano Hitch, of Shanghai, China. 5. Warren, died in infancy, at Newburgh. 6. Warren, born July 11, 1852. 7. Sara, mentioned below. 8. Philippe de Lamoy, born Feb. 3, 1857. 9. Catherine Robbins, born May 24, 1860. 10. Frederic Adrian, born Sept. 10, 1863, in Hong Kong. 11. Laura Franklin, born Dec. 23, 1864, in Hong Kong.

*VII. Sara*, fifth daughter of Warren (2) and Catherine (Robbins) Delano, was born September 21, 1854, and was educated in this country and in Europe. She married, October 7, 1880, James Roosevelt, of New York.

*Hitch Arms*—Argent, a bend vair between two cotises indented gules.

*Crest*—A heraldic antelope's head erased sable, tufted, armed and maned or, vulned through the neck with a bird bolt gold, feathered argent, holding the end in the mouth.

*Motto*—*Azi numcrantur avarum.* (The generations of our forefathers are numbered).

*Frederic Delano Hitch* was born in Fairhaven, Bristol county, Massachusetts, in 1833, son of Captain George and Abby (Church) Hitch.

After completing his education, he began his business career in the State of Maryland, where he was successfully engaged until 1860, in which year he went to China and entered the service of Russell & Company, merchants and bankers, the leading American firm in their line in that country. For a number of years Mr. Hitch served in the capacity of manager of a fleet of fourteen steamers which plied the Yangtse river from Shanghai, the most important maritime city of China, situated on the left bank of the Hwangpoo river, under the name of the Shanghai Steam Navigation Company.



Marrin Delano



Frederic Delano Hotel



## DELANO-HITCH FAMILIES

The company sold out to the Chinese in the late seventies, the line then becoming known as the China Merchants Company.

With the exception of two visits to his native country, Mr. Hitch remained in China until his resignation as a partner from the firm of Russell & Company in 1884, whereupon he returned to the United States, taking up his residence in the "Algonac," Newburgh, New York, where he became a prominent and influential citizen, identifying himself, as does also his wife, with various phases of social work, not alone in the city of Newburgh, but throughout the State of New York, having been especially active in the Associated Charities of Newburgh, St. Luke's Hospital, the Newburgh Agency for Dependent Children, the State Charities Aid Association, and the Church of Our Father at Newburgh. Mr. Hitch also served as a trustee of the Laura Franklin Free Hospital for Children, in New York City, and for nearly twenty-four years acted as its treasurer. Mr. Hitch was scrupulously honorable in all his dealings with mankind, and therefore won a reputation for public and private integrity, and his career is well worthy of emulation.

Mr. Hitch married, October 16, 1877, Annie Lyman, daughter of Warren and Catherine (Robbins) Delano, of "Algonac," Newburgh, New York. Mr. Hitch died at "Algonac," March 21, 1911.







## Rt. Rev. William Neilson McVickar, D. D.,

BISHOP OF RHODE ISLAND



THAT branch of the McVickar family of which the late William Neilson McVickar, Bishop of Rhode Island, was descended, was established in America in the latter part of the eighteenth century by John McVickar, a native of the north of Ireland.

*McVickar Arms*—(From Vermont's "American Heraldry"): Quarterly, 1 and 4: or an eagle displayed with two heads gules, 2 and 3: per bend embattled, argent and gules. Over all an escutcheon or charged with three stags' horns, erect gules, two and one.

*Crest*—An eagle displayed with two heads, per pale embattled argent and gules.

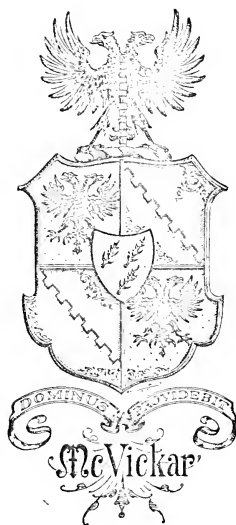
*Motto*—*Dominus providebit.* (The Lord will provide).

I. *John McVickar*, ancestor of the family, was a successful linen merchant and settled in New York City. He later became prominent in many branches of activity in the city, and gained a reputation as a philanthropist. He married, May 19, 1771 (?), Anna Moore, daughter of John Moore, of Newtown, Long Island. Their children were: 1. James. 2. Archibold, married, Aug. 30, 1809, Catherine Livingston, daughter of Henry Brockholst Livingston. 3. Rev. Dr. and Prof. John McVickar, born in 1787, died October 29, 1868; married, Nov. 12, 1809, Eliza Bard, daughter of Samuel Bard, M. D. 4. Edward, died Dec. 6, 1866; married, Dec. 1, 1819, Frances Matilda Constable, daughter of William Constable. 5. Benjamin McVickar, M. D., married, Nov. 2, 1825, Isaphane Catherine Lawrence, daughter of Isaac Lawrence. 6. Eliza, married, Feb. 26, 1810, William Constable. 7. Hannah Augusta, died 1841; married, Sept. 4, 1812, William Jay.

II. *James McVickar*, son of John and Anna (Moore) McVickar, was a successful and prominent New York merchant. He married (first) on June 15, 1806, Eweretta Constable. He married (second) Catherine (Bucknor) McVickar, daughter of William G. Bucknor, and widow of Nathan McVickar. Children by first wife: John Augustus, mentioned below; and Mary Stuart, married, Nov. 4, 1843, William Whitney.

III. *John Augustus McVickar, M. D.*, son of James and Eweretta (Constable) McVickar, was for a number of years a successful and prominent physician and surgeon in New York City. He married (first) February 20, 1837, Charlotte Neilson, daughter of William Neilson. She died December 1, 1871. He married (second) Eweretta McVickar, daughter of Edward McVickar, May 5, 1873. His







M. H. McTear



children by first wife were: 1. Susan, married, April 1, 1857, L. Philo Mills. 2. Eweretta. 3. William Neilson, mentioned below. 4. James, married, April 30, 1873, Ada Jaffray, daughter of Edward S. Jaffray.

*IV. William Neilson McVickar, D. D.*, son of John Augustus and Charlotte (Neilson) McVickar, was born Oct. 19, 1843, in New York City. He received his education in private schools of the city, after which he entered Columbia University. In 1865 he was graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Arts and with honors. In the fall of the year 1865 he entered the Philadelphia Divinity School for the purpose of preparing himself for the Christian ministry. He remained there a year and a half, at the end of which time he returned to New York City and completed his course in the General Theological Seminary. In 1867 he was made a deacon, when he became an assistant to the Rev. Dr. Stephen H. Tyng, of St. George's Church, New York City. In July, 1868, he was ordained priest of the Protestant Episcopal church, and received as his first charge the parish of Holy Trinity in Harlem, a young church, without a church building and having a congregation at times not exceeding ten or twelve people. Services were held in a nearby hall, at the time that the parish came into the hands of Dr. McVickar. He threw his whole soul into the work of upbuilding a strong church, increased his congregation with great rapidity, and built the large church and Sunday school building on the corner of Fifth avenue and 127th street. This he accomplished in a period of seven years, during which time he had received calls from other churches for his services, among which was a call to St. Paul's Church in Boston in 1873. In 1875, however, having set his first parish spiritually and temporarily on its feet, he accepted a call to Holy Trinity Parish in Philadelphia. Bishop McVickar's connection with his parish extended over a period of twenty-two years. During that time he became one of the prominent figures of his diocese, and was recognized as a leader of strength and vision. For several years, beginning with 1883, he was a member of the General Convention. In Philadelphia, during the years that followed, he was a member of the board of managers of the Deaf and Dumb Institution of Pennsylvania; a trustee of the diocese; a member of the board of overseers of the Philadelphia Divinity School; a member of the board of managers of the Episcopal Hospital; and a member of the board of managers of the General Board of Missions.

Bishop McVickar's reputation for consummate ability in things ecclesiastical had spread beyond the confines of his parish in Philadelphia. He became known as one of those few, or rather comparatively few, men in the ministry who were endowed with the God-given quality of leadership. On October 27, 1897, at the Con-





vention of the Diocese of Rhode Island, Bishop McVickar was chosen coadjutor bishop of Rhode Island. The head of the diocese was Bishop Clark. Bishop McVickar was consecrated in the Church of Holy Trinity at Philadelphia. He came into full power as bishop, automatically with the death of Bishop Clark, September 5, 1903. His service as the Bishop of Rhode Island is remarkable for the progress and advance made throughout the State under his administration of that office. Bishop McVickar was a scholar and student of no small repute, as will be seen from the honorary degrees bestowed upon him by colleges in different parts of the country. In 1885 he received the degree of D. D. from Kenyon College, in Ohio. In 1898 he received the same degree from the University of Pennsylvania, and the degree of S. T. D. from Columbia University. Brown University conferred upon him the degree of LL.D in 1904.

There is no more adequate test of the character of a man than his standing in the estimation of his friends and intimates, the men who know the nature of his work, who work beside him, who strive to the same end, imbued with the same idea and ideals of service. Nothing could give more clearly the life and character of the late Bishop McVickar than the excerpts appended hereto, resolutions passed after his death by various bodies, religious and secular, written by masterly preachers and literary men:

"The standing committee of the Diocese of Rhode Island is again mysteriously called upon, after a brief interval of less than seven years, to make in the recess of the convention, official announcement of the death of its Bishop, and to bear witness to the profound grief of the Diocese in the loss of its beloved head.

"The Right Reverend William Neilson McVickar, D. D., LL. D., consecrated January 27, 1898, as Bishop Coadjutor, since September 7, 1903, third Bishop of Rhode Island, rested from his labors at Beverly, Massachusetts, on June 28, 1910. This life thus closed on earth has been one of manifest grace and power. Called from a wide and conspicuous field of parochial experience to the exalted station of the Episcopate, Dr. McVickar was amply and eminently prepared to maintain the work and traditions of one of the oldest dioceses of the American Church. He proved an efficient and congenial helpmate to the venerable Bishop Clark through the closing years of the life of that great prelate, whose mantle fell upon his coadjutor as upon a worthy successor.

"The fame of Rhode Island, under the brilliant chieftainship of Bishop Clark, had become fair and far-reaching, and it suffered no eclipse nor wane under Bishop McVickar, who entered at once into the spirit and interests of the Commonwealth and of the Diocese. He won rapidly popular respect and affection on every side, until he passed from us; it is not too much to say that he was our first citizen.

"In the councils of the Church both in the United States, and in England, he was eloquent and forceful. In the great causes of evangelization, philanthropy and social reform he was a recognized leader, whose advice and advocacy were eagerly sought. In the Board of Missions, and as a trustee of the Hampton Institute, he occupied positions of national importance.

"Our Bishop's life has been all too brief for our hopes and expectations. His sun seems to have gone down while it was yet day, but little past meridian. We confidently looked for him to guide and tend his flock for many years to come in those pleasant ways of truth and peace which have marked his gentle way. Yet the Episcopate which now appears to have ended so abruptly has already had its harvests, and will yet yield others as the fruit of its patient sowing. The people of Rhode Island, of all sorts and conditions, of all creeds and of none, have had a vision of the Good Shepherd reflected



in Bishop McVickar and the effect of that vision will be realized for many years to come; the institutions of the Diocese have been fostered by his loving care, and he leaves them in growing strength and vigor, while above all, the cathedral idea and organization, the initiative of which was his, will in the future be an enduring monument to William Neilson McVickar, who will stand out in our diocesan history as its founder.

"Noble, however, will be that monument of loving kindness which his life and character have reared in human hearts, an ever-living memory of one who loved the souls of men. Priest! Pastor! Bishop! Father in God! Friend, tender and true! Farewell until we greet thee with the 'Good morrow of eternity!' Meanwhile God grant thee His eternal rest and cause to shine upon thee His perpetual light!"

### The Rhode Island Clergy adopted the following minute:

"The clergy of the diocese of Rhode Island, profoundly moved by the death of their late Bishop, William Neilson McVickar, desire to express their sense of loss and make some record of what he has been to them.

"Twelve years ago, known to but few of us, well-known perhaps to none of us, he came among us as a needed coadjutor to an honored predecessor whose years had become to him a burden. How faithfully and tenderly he served him many of us can bear witness. Assuming nothing to himself, deferring all things to his elder, putting sturdy shoulders beneath whatever load had become irksome, bringing cheer and comfort with look and word, he discharged each task that devolved upon him. As a son ministering to a loved and revered father, he toiled gladly.

"Then in due season his place was changed. He was alone in his office. Very quickly he magnified that office, not in its dignities, but in its duties. He grew in the discharge of it. He assumed new responsibilities. Wherever there was sickness or sorrow brought to his notice his gentle presence was felt consoling it. As fresh social opportunities opened before him, he made his own precedents for dealing with them. He did not claim a wider jurisdiction; it was accorded to him because he revealed himself as a man of God and a brother of men. With holy and humble heart, and with resolute, because consecrated, purpose, he went forward and his people followed him.

"He helped each one of us as far as we sought or would accept his service. He became a minister at large, a pastor among pastors, within and without his own communion. He brought with him everywhere a willingness to serve, a sound judgment, patience to wait, a spirit of peace and good will. His large heart went forth on loving errands to his clergy, his laity, his fellow citizens. Wisely and thoughtfully he concerned himself with public interests, seeking always that they should be founded on righteousness. He was at home everywhere, for he was always in his Father's house and concerned with his Father's business.

"In the pulpit or on the platform, his word was with power. The common people heard him gladly. They felt his transparent honesty, were stirred by his generous zeal. He spoke on the common level, as one who stood beside them, however he might tower above them. His life was his best message. Being dead he yet speaketh. The tones of that marvelous voice, vibrant with sympathy, are silent, but we hear and would hear them still."

Organizations representing almost every phase of endeavor, men of all the professions, in fact almost every walk of life, added their tributes to the memory of Bishop McVickar. The public press in its columns gave space to the man whom it recognized not only as a religious leader, but as a prominent public man. The following is an extract from the *Newport News*:

"He was a man of magnificent physique. He was six feet five inches tall and built on extraordinarily large proportions. His build made him a commanding figure in any gathering where he happened to be.

"It is related of him, while still a young man, together with Phillips Brooks and Mr. Richardson, of Boston, both of whom were also of mammoth build, he was attending a convention at London. A speaker, in discussing the American people, described them as a decadent race and declared emphatically that their stature was growing



less. When the orator had finished, the three massive young Americans rose side by side, squared their shoulders and announced: 'We are Americans!' Bishop McVickar always smiled when this story was related and would not vouch for its authenticity.

"He possessed a voice of great richness and sweetness. As a pulpit speaker he was noted particularly for his qualities of earnestness and sincerity. His friends were particularly charmed with the simplicity of character and attractive personality. The Bishop was described as a conservative broad churchman. He was especially noted for his belief in the necessity of an earnest spiritual life."

The combination of Bishop McVickar's personality, sincerity and ability was so great that it broke the strong barriers that difference in religious faith erects. The Rev. Dr. Frank, pastor of the First Baptist Church of Pawtucket, Rhode Island, said:

"Just now our State is lamenting the untimely death of one of the noblemen in the ranks of churchmen. Bishop McVickar still leads, though the giant form strides the earth no more. That hand will still guide and that voice continue to give counsel through many coming years. Four days after the death of Lincoln, Chaplain McCabe wrote in his journal: 'Our Atlas has gone to the shades of Erebus. Who will now uphold the falling skies?' In like manner our churchmen of every name will lament the loss of this leader whose strength was as the strength of ten because his heart was pure. Religion has been generous in its gift of great and good men for the highest leadership of mankind. It will continue to do the same in the future."

The Right Rev. Monseigneur Thomas F. Doran, Vicar-General of the Providence Diocese of the Roman Catholic church, also expressed himself in warm admiration of Bishop McVickar, as well as did countless other clergymen.

The words of the Rev. Mr. Goodwin, of the Pawtucket Congregational Church, are as follows:

"It is true of this great Christian, as was said at the death of Mark Hopkins, 'A great life has gone down, but it has not gone out.' Bishop McVickar was a man of simple and childlike spirit, with the beautiful freshness of youth unsullied by years of wide experience in the world. He was kind, tender-hearted and generous, always a friend of the weak and a manly co-laborer with the strong. An aristocrat in culture and refinement, his sympathies yet wide and democratic, the interests of all sorts of men being ever of great concern to him.

"He was ever a great human, truly illustrating the words of the Hebrew prophet, 'In whom God spoke, I will make a man more rare than fine gold.' He was a great churchman, dignifying the high office with which his own church had honored him, and throwing the ample mantle of catholicity of heart over all those who under whatsoever name are striving to do God's will on earth. Today even the churches which were founded on the idea of a church without a Bishop, and a State without a King, feel that from them also has been taken a leader of commanding strength and a fearless champion of truth and righteousness.

"It was eminently fitting that the services held at his funeral should end with the words of Christian confidence illustrative of his life of joy, helpfulness and conquering hope:

"'The strife is o'er, the battle is done,  
The victory of life is won,  
The song of triumph has begun.'"

These are but a few of the tributes to the life, character, work and personality of Bishop McVickar, and have been culled from amongst hundreds of others.



## Ungrich=Littell

*Ungrich Arms*—Or, a point azure charged with a crowned lion rampant argent, holding in its dexter paw a sword, on each side of the point an eagle displayed sable.

*Crest*—Issuing out of a crowned helmet, a pair of wings displayed, dexter per sable and or, sinister per pale argent and azure, between them a demi-lion as in the arms.

*Mantling*—Dexter, sable and or, sinister, azure and argent.



THE qualities and attributes which have been the determining factors in a man's success are somewhat difficult of analysis, and any attempt, however inspired, must necessarily fall short of complete understanding. It is possible to recognize, however, the essential qualities which have been vital moving forces in the career of the successful man, but the individuality of the man must be felt and sensed, rather than gained through the medium of the biographer. Henry Ungrich, Jr., attained a conspicuous success in the business world. A man of energy, purpose, determination, and wise forethought, he built for himself a career which counted among men and brought him rightfully into that class of men whose achievements are worthy of record.

Scion of a family which for several centuries held a position of prominence in the life of those provinces of Western Germany bordering on the River Rhine, Henry Ungrich, Sr., the immigrant ancestor of the American branch of the family, was born December 19, 1819, in the town of Kreuznach, on the River Nahe, a few miles from the junction of the river with the Rhine. The town is chiefly notable for its salt springs, which were discovered in 1478, and because they contain iodine and bromine are used for medicinal purposes. Situated but twenty-one miles southwest of the famous city of Mayence, the town is a much frequented watering place, and draws travelers from all over the world to its springs. Here Henry Ungrich, Sr., spent the early years of his life in that period of unrest and turmoil in Germany which for several decades preceded the Franco-Prussian war. The vision of America as a land of promise, in which the bonds of caste and tradition were unknown, appealed to him, and in 1845, with his wife, Eliza (Kamm) Ungrich, born March 21, 1822, a native of Worms, Germany, he immigrated to America. They settled in New York City, where Henry Ungrich at once established himself in the baking trade, which he had followed in Germany. Starting at first in a comparatively humble establishment, he met with a high degree of success, and enlarged his quarters and resources gradually to meet the increasing demand of his trade. He was a man of business genius and keen





judgment, and invested largely in real estate in New York, principally in Harlem, retiring from active business life a comparatively wealthy man several years before his death, which occurred March 1, 1901. The death of his wife preceded his own some years, February 15, 1885.

*Henry Ungrich, Jr.*, son of Henry and Eliza (Kamm) Ungrich, was born in New York City, New York, September 15, 1850. He spent his boyhood in the city and attended Public School No. 35, which was then under the direction of Thomas Hunter, one of the most famous and best loved educators of New York City, under whose preceptorship many men whose names stand high in business and professional life today received the rudiments of their education. After being graduated from Public School No. 35, Henry Ungrich, Jr., entered the College of the City of New York.

Following his graduation, he entered upon business life in the employ of a large hardware firm, in the capacity of traveling salesman, a position which gave him the opportunity of visiting practically every section of the United States. A student of times and conditions, he gained from this extensive travel a broadness of education, sympathy and vision, the culture and polish of a cosmopolitan, and a familiarity with conditions of business and finance throughout the country, which in his later career gave him an excellent advantage. His next connection was with a flour concern of New York City, again as traveling salesman. Traveling about the country brought Mr. Ungrich into close contact with real estate values and transactions, and upon his return to New York, after a short period spent in his father's establishment, he entered actively into the real estate business, in which he remained until the end of his life. Coming first into contact with the real estate and property interests of New York through his care of his father's extensive interests, Mr. Ungrich subsequently entered into larger transactions. During the period which followed, he dealt largely in stocks, maintaining a constant connection with the stock market. Mr. Ungrich possessed that type of business genius which enabled him to foresee with a reasonable degree of certainty the change in conditions affecting real estate, and he purchased accordingly. In the course of business life he accrued, through careful investment, a large fortune, and at his death was considered a wealthy man.

His interests outside the field of real estate were largely financial, and he was connected in executive capacity with several well known firms in New York and in White Plains, where he resided. He was a prominent figure in the fraternal and social life of White Plains, and was also active in Masonic circles. He was a past master of Harlem Lodge, No. 457, Free and Accepted Masons; held membership in Tabernacle Chapter, No. 306, Royal Arch Masons;



## UNGRICH-LITTELL

and was a Sir Knight of Crusader Commandery, No. 56, Knights Templar. He was a member of the Republican party, though an active advocate of non-partisanship in politics, guiding his vote by the fitness of the man for office. He was a member of the West Chester Congregational Church of White Plains.

Henry Ungrich, Jr., married Emily A. Gloek, of New York, who was born January 16, 1855, and died March 4, 1901. They were the parents of a daughter, Minnie Florence, who married John D. Thees, Jr., of New York City, but later of New Rochelle, New York. Mr. and Mrs. Thees were the parents of two children: A daughter, Glendon; and a son, John D. Thees (4th).

Mr. Ungrich married (second) Emma Leonora Tyler, of New York City, daughter of Charles Brown and Mary Emily (Littell) Tyler, her parents born in Middle Patent, town of North Castle, West Chester county, New York. Mr. Tyler was the son of William and Susan (Van Bramer) Tyler, formerly of Harlem Lane, New York, and Mrs. Tyler, the daughter of Egbert and Caroline (Peeks) Littell.

Mrs. Ungrich, who survives her husband, resides in White Plains. On both paternal and maternal lines she is a descendant of two long established families of England.

Mr. Ungrich died very suddenly on April 10, 1915, in San Francisco, California, where he had gone with his wife to attend the Exposition.

(The Tyler Line.)

*Tyler Arms*—Sable, on a fesse or, between three cats passant guardant argent, a cross moline enclosed by two crescents gules.

*Crest*—A demi-cat rampant and erased or, charged on the side with a cross crosslet fitchee gules in a crescent of the last.

The name Tyler was adopted when the use of surnames became common in England, and is occupative in its derivation, meaning the "tyler," one who bakes clay into tiles, a tiler. The Anglo-Saxon word from which the name was originally taken is "tigel," which is a corruption of the Latin *tegula*, tile, which itself comes from the verb *tegere*, to cover. The name has been variously spelled during the centuries since it was first adopted—Tylere, Tilere, Tyghler, Tygheler, Tygehelere, and Tiegheler. The first mention of the name in authentic records occurs in 1273, that of Geoffrey Tulere, County Hants, England. The family in the United States has given a President to the Union, and has furnished sons who have rendered signal service in the various departments of public activity and in other walks in life.

(The Littell Line.)

*Littell Arms*—Azure, a sabbie enrailed or, in chief a mullet of the last.

The name of Little or Littell is a very ancient one in Great Bri-



tain, and belongs to that great group of patronymies that owe their origin to the inveterate habit of nick-naming among the early inhabitants of that island, of which we have a familiar example in the famous case of Little John (originally John Littell) the lieutenant of Robin Hood, which has come down to us as Littlejohn a name closely allied in the character of its derivation to the one we are considering. Other names of like origin are those of Small, Stroug, Stout, and an innumerable list with most of which we are familiar. It is therefore unquestionable that one of the early forbears of the Littell or Little family in this country was of diminutive stature or, since a rather obvious form of sarcasm was much in use in the bestowal of these nick-names, the reverse. Indeed, it is probable that the various lines bearing this name and which are found in many different parts of Great Britain, sprang originally from a number of different sources and unrelated ancestors, each of whom was distinguished by this soubriquet. We find the name under the most various forms throughout England and even more commonly in Scotland and it is also widely distributed in the north of Ireland. The variations in spelling in early documents are both numerous and remarkable. At least nine forms were well established prior to 1700: Littell, Littell, Litel, Lytel, Lytell, Lyttelle, Little, Lytel, and Lyttle. Probably the earliest mention of it in England is that of William Little, born at Bridlington, Yorkshire, in 1136 A. D. He was a monk in Newborough Abbey and wrote a history of England during the period from the Norman Conquest to 1197, two years before the death of Richard I. Some centuries later we read that Ellen, daughter of Sir Thomas Little of Berkshire, married Edward Bacon of Shrubland Hall, Suffolkshire, son of Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal of England, and brother of the famous philosopher and statesman, Sir Francis Bacon, Viscount St. Albans. In more modern times we find that a family of this name has its seat at Llanvair Grange, Monmouthshire, and the vice-chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster was recently held by George Little. That the two forms of the name Little and Littell have been interchangeable comparatively recently is shown that the arms borne by a family spelling their name in the former manner are described as: Or, a saltire engrailed sable, an obvious modification of the one given above.

In the colonial period in this country the Littell name is not as frequently met with as some, but there were several immigrants at an early period who in that day of careless orthography appear to have spelt it Littell or Little about indiscriminately. The first of the name to arrive in this country was Thomas Littell or Little, who married, at Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1630, Ann Warren, and died at Marshfield in 1671. He was a lawyer by profession and his wife was one of the *Mayflower* passengers. At the present time his descendants number several thousand scattered all over



the United States. Then there was George Littell or Little, who came to Newbury, Massachusetts, about 1640 and who according to tradition resided upon Unicorn street, London, near London Bridge, before coming to this country. There is also a tradition that he had a brother Thomas, an officer in Cromwell's navy, who gave to him a deed to lands at Barbadoes in the West Indies, which were afterwards stolen from him during his residence at Newbury. He became a large land owner at Newbury, and was twice married, first to Alice Poor, and second to Mrs. Eleanor Barnard. He was the ancestor of the prominent Maine families of this name and also of branches in Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Vermont and Connecticut. The members of the various lines have always maintained the high position in the community originally taken by their earliest forebears and many of them have distinguished themselves in various callings, professional and business. Three towns in the United States, including Littleton, New Hampshire, have been named after members of the George Little family, and as many as five college presidents and many other prominent men can trace their ancestry back to him, while many distinguished clergymen have been descended from Thomas Little.

*I. James Littell*, of Stamford, Connecticut, was born December 23, 1734, and died November 8, 1825, at the venerable age of ninety-one years. He married, February 9, 1761, Desire Brown, born October 5, 1739, and died July 23, 1826. They were the parents of the following children: John, born Dec. 17, 1761; Ebenezer, born Aug. 13, 1763; Sarah, born Oct. 20, 1765; James, mentioned below; Benjamin, born Dec. 31, 1769; Ezra, born Jan. 12, 1772; Henry, born Jan. 19, 1774; Justus, born Jan. 15, 1777; Mary, born March 24, 1780.

*II. James Littell*, son of James and Desire (Brown) Littell, was born November 29, 1767, and died March 3, 1855, in the eighty-eighth year of his life. During his early manhood he enlisted in the company of Captain Jonathan Bell, Ninth Regiment Connecticut Militia, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel John Mead, and forming a part of the forces of General Wooster. He was honorably discharged September 27, 1776, reënlisted, and was again discharged December 24 of the same year. He served as a corporal with his company during the campaign in New York State at that time. He married Lydia Nickerson, born January 4, 1770, died April 13, 1821, and they were the parents of the following children: Elizabeth, born January 22, 1792, died Feb. 22, 1852; James, born March 1, 1794, died Jan. 16, 1829; William, born April 18, 1796, married (first) Naney Oviatt, (second) Amelia Woolsey; Cyrus B., born July 22, 1798; Josiah, born Feb. 15, 1801, died Jan. 12, 1867; Warren, born Nov. 4, 1803; David, born July 5, 1805, married Cyn-





this Jones, by whom he had five children, and died Nov. 29, 1875; Egbert, mentioned below; Levi, born Dec. 28, 1811, married Mary Smith, by whom he had one child, and died in 1876.

III. *Egbert Littell*, eighth child of James and Lydia (Nickerson) Littell, was born January 1, 1809, and died Dec. 11, 1842. He married Caroline Feeks, born July 29, 1806, died Feb. 22, 1876, and they were the parents of the following children: William Egbert, born Feb. 6, 1832, died May 29, 1854; Orville Green, born April 24, 1836, died April 20, 1856; Lydia Ann, born Oct. 26, 1834, died June 3, 1835; Harriet Augusta, born Jan. 2, 1830, died Sept. 28, 1838; Harriet Augusta (2), born Sept. 25, 1838, died Aug. 19, 1854; Mary Emily, mentioned below.

IV. *Mary Emily Littell*, youngest child of Egbert and Caroline (Feeks) Littell, was born March 28, 1841, and died December 16, 1896. She became the wife of Charles Brown Tyler, and the mother of Emma Leonora Tyler, who became the wife of Henry Ungrich.







*J. W. Karttwill*



## Frederick W. Hartwell



FREDERICK W. HARTWELL, secretary and manager of the General Fire Extinguisher Company of Providence, Rhode Island, from the time of the founding of the gigantic corporation until his death, was a figure of influence in business and finance in Rhode Island for a quarter of a century, ranking prominently among the master-minds which controlled these fields in the closing decades of the nineteenth century.

Frederick W. Hartwell was born at Langdon, New Hampshire, January 8, 1850, the son of Samuel Estabrook and Lucy M. (King) Hartwell, and a descendant in the eighth generation of William Hartwell, the founder of the family in America. The Hartwell family dates from the year 1636, from which time to the present day it has figured prominently in New England life and affairs. Concord and Lincoln, Massachusetts, were the homes of the family for several generations. Samuel Estabrook Hartwell, grandfather of the late Frederick W. Hartwell, was the first of the direct line to remove to New Hampshire, where he became the owner of a large estate, and where he settled permanently. His son, Samuel Estabrook Hartwell, Jr., inherited a large portion of his estate in New Hampshire, and remained there a farmer on a large scale until his death.

In 1861, following the death of both his parents, Frederick W. Hartwell came to Providence to make his home with his uncle, the late John Bryant Hartwell, who at that time was a power in mercantile life in the city of Providence, where he died December 9, 1872. He was given excellent educational advantages and studied in the elementary and high schools of the city, later attending the Kimball Union Academy at Meriden, New Hampshire, for a year. In 1868 he began his business career, entering the offices of Day & Chapin as bookkeeper. Within a short time he was transferred to the Elm street woolen mill, operated by the latter firm, in the capacity of bookkeeper and paymaster. Here he remained during the five years following, but finding the field somewhat narrow and not altogether to his liking, he resigned shortly before his marriage, in 1873, to become bookkeeper in the offices of the Providence Steam and Gas Pipe Company, of which his father-in-law was at that time treasurer. From this position of comparative unimportance he rose rapidly in the firm, displaying an ability for the handling of large affairs which, in 1884, brought him the office of secretary and manager of the Providence plant, of the newly



founded million-dollar corporation, the General Fire Extinguisher Company. In 1893 the Providence Steam and Gas Pipe Company, which had been manufacturing for some time a water sprinkler for installation in buildings and stores as a safeguard against destructive fires, the inventions and patents for which were then in their control, incorporated with a western firm, the Neracker & Hill Sprinkler Company, which was engaged in the manufacture of a similar device, under the firm name of the General Fire Extinguisher Company, with a capitalization of \$1,000,000, and Mr. Hartwell was elected secretary and manager of the Providence plant. In the years which followed, he was a factor of greatest importance in the upbuilding and development of the corporation. In 1906 he became a member of the board of directors. He was also active on the executive boards of several other Providence concerns, and was a director of the Atlantic National Bank.

His interests, however, were not wholly confined to the field of business. He was at least as well known in the philanthropic circles of his city. For several years Mr. Hartwell served as a commissioner of the Dexter Donation. From 1899 to 1900 he acted as president of the Providence Young Men's Christian Association, of which he had long been a member, remaining until his death a member of its board of managers. He never forgot the struggles and discouragements of his youth, and was always a source of encouragement to the many young men who came to him for advice and assistance in his later days. His service as a member of the Central Baptist Church of Providence, and as superintendent of its Sunday school from 1902, was marked by such devotion and such material support as to command the utmost admiration, especially since it came from a man whose business and public duties were of great magnitude. He applied to business affairs the code of ethics by which he governed his private life. The principles of equity, mercy and justice which governed his every act made him honored, trusted and loved by men. "Faith in man and God, and an optimistic mien in the process of their service—these sum up his loved and useful character."

On October 15, 1873, Mr. Hartwell married Mary Loring Hartshorn, who was born in Providence, Rhode Island, August 14, 1851, daughter of the late Rev. Joseph Charles and Rachel (Thurber) Hartshorn. They were the parents of the following children: 1. Joseph C., born at Warwick, R. I., August 20, 1874; educated in the public schools of Providence, prepared for college at the Worcester Academy, and was graduated from Brown University in the class of 1899, with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. He is now employed in the engineering department of the General Fire Extinguisher Company of Providence; he is a member of the University Club among others, and makes his home with his mother in Providence. 2. John S., born Dec. 22, 1875, died in 1882. 3. Lucy





## FREDERICK W. HARTWELL

King, born Feb. 16, 1878; attended the public and high schools of Providence, and was graduated from the Abbott Academy at Andover, Massachusetts; she married William B. Peck, of Providence, and they are the parents of three children: Margaret Hartwell, born July 19, 1904; Ruth Hartshorn, born Dec. 13, 1906; Virginia Hunter, born June 12, 1913. 4. Mary Hartshorn, born Nov. 21, 1882, died July 1, 1915; she attended the public schools of Providence, and continued her studies at Dana Hall, Wellesley, and Brown University; she married Leonard Wollsey Cronkhite, of Boston, and has one daughter, Elizabeth Cronkhite. 5. Helen Thurber, born Oct. 28, 1885; attended the public and high schools of Providence, and was graduated from Wellesley College in the class of 1908; she married Rev. W. Douglas Swaffield, now of East Boston, Massachusetts; they are the parents of three children: Esther Harding, born Nov. 17, 1913; Frederick Hartwell, born April 13, 1915; Marian Nichols, born August 6, 1916.

Frederick W. Hartwell died at his home, No. 77 Parade street, Providence, Rhode Island, October 9, 1911. Mr. Hartwell is buried in the Swan Point Cemetery. Mrs. Hartwell, who survives her husband, resides at No. 16 Freeman Parkway, Providence, Rhode Island.





## Editorial

### THE HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE

Memorial Day, May 30th last, was regarded with a degree of dignity and reverence as never before, and which it is not conceivable can find a counterpart in any discernible coming time. It had a spirit all its own. The services of the previous year were, indeed, of peculiar import, but there had been a change in conditions. *Then*, the nation was involved in the mightiest of all the world's wars, the duration of which was uncertain, and its sacrifices not to be measured. The requiem note in memory of the soldier dead of the War for the Union and the Spanish-American War was less pronounced than in former years. It was rather an undertone, overborne by the overwhelming voice of the people, raised in determination to vindicate American honor and battle for the sake of humanity. Thoughts of the past in large measure had disappeared in view of the present and future.

The last Memorial Day had a meaning all its own. There was abundant sorrow and abundant joy. In the processions were multitudes of black-robed women, the gold star on the sleeve bearing witness to the loss of husband, son or brother. Deploring such woful sacrifices, orators and hearers joyed in the courage and endurance of the fallen, and enshrined them in their hearts as worthy knights in humanity's latest and greatest crusade. Yet was even a higher plane reached in a comprehensive realization of the tremendous meaning of the vindication and restoration of the Union under the statesmanship of Lincoln, and the military genius of Grant. It had only in these recent days come to be discerned that the great result achieved by those great leaders and their followers, was not only to the advantage of the American people, confirming to them possession of the sacred heritage coming down from the Patriot Fathers, but also to the advantage, yea, the salvation, of seekers after liberty the world over;—that the re-establishment of the Union had made possible the immense and, in human view, indispensable, part taken



by the nation on foreign soil, in crushing an audacious military power holding to the pernicious doctrine that might makes right, and in support of the cardinal principles upon which civilization is founded.

---

### BATTLES IN TIMES OF PEACE

There are indications from various quarters that a cessation of war is not necessarily a return to peace. There are symptoms not only of labor disturbances, but of troubles growing out of increased rentals, and of higher prices of various articles of consumption, more or less necessary to human existence. Not only this, but there is an unknown quantity of humanity of whom grim predictions are made as to the results of legislation prohibitive of intoxicating beverages—results physical and results moral, leading to X results in the individual condition and conduct.

The greater number of newspaper and magazine writers who have approached this subject, make dire predictions of a very great resort to pernicious drugs on the part of that large portion of the population who will find themselves deprived of their accustomed alcoholic beverages. In marked contrast with these dismal forebodings, is a consideration of the question by one who sees other "Temptations Ahead to Guard Against," and exhorts "Now that we have got rid of alcohol, let's not over-eat and over-drink other things in a way to injure health." The phrases in quotation marks form the caption of an article in a contemporary magazine, from the pen of Dr. James J. Walsh, of New York City, one of our foremost psychologists and neurologists, and an author of fame.

Dr. Walsh is no pessimist. He looks approvingly upon the disappearance of all that (to use a short term) goes under the head of "rum." As to the results, he looks for no striking reaction from prohibitory regulations, and answering the question he sets forth, "What are people (those deprived of their strong drink) going to do?" he says, "They are probably going to attend to their business, and forget drinking." But Dr. Walsh's main concern is, what is to take the place of the drink, with those who have been accustomed to it, and in a few pages he gives answer. He thinks that people will drink very much more coffee, in the belief that coffee is a stimulant, its effect, as compared with liquor, being in degree rather than in



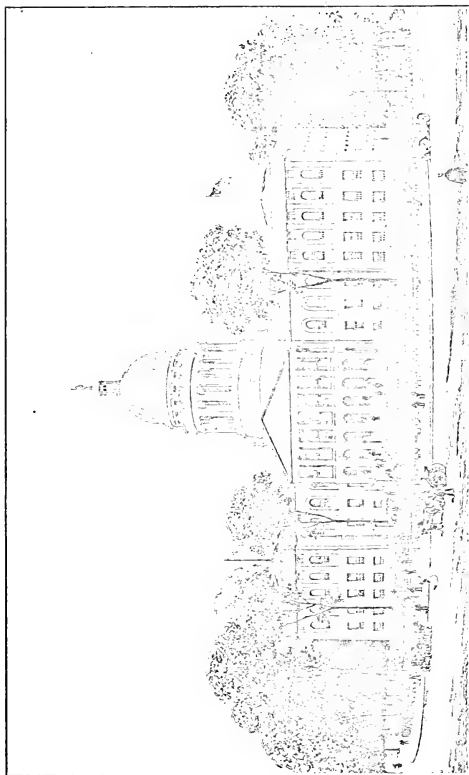
kind. With the authority of a master physiologist he descants upon the effects of coffee, setting forth the evils attendant upon its excessive use, and holding out a danger signal against substituting one bad habit for another. His cautions follow into other lines. He warns parents against enfeebled nerves and impaired digestion in their children, due not only to overmuch use of soda fountain sweets, but to a certain amount of a drug (thein) contained in such beverages, and which is native in tea, and this last proposition is followed by definite information as to the proper making of tea, which in the light of the physiologist's revelations is a more serious matter than most people realize.

Taking Dr. Walsh's article in its entirety—in its very understandable depiction of the evils attendant upon very common articles of consumption which in popular estimation are entirely innocent,—it may well be recommended to various reform bodies for wholesale distribution in pamphlet form. Moral reforms have at times fallen far short of what was hoped for, because the appeal was made on moral grounds alone. The physical needs are oftentimes more urgent and also more responsive to treatment after such a fashion as outlined in the article upon which is made this imperfect comment.



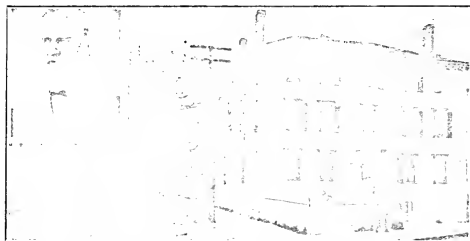




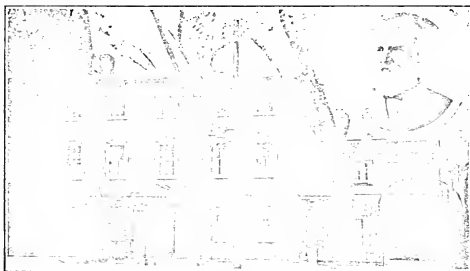


STATE CAPITOL, AUGUSTA

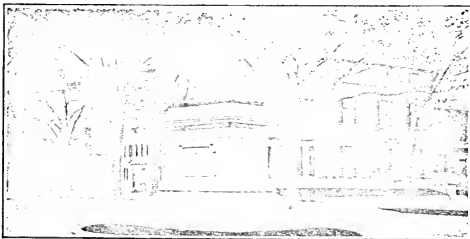




LONGFELLOW'S BIRTHPLACE, PORTLAND



LONGFELLOW HOME, PORTLAND



LONGFELLOW MONUMENT, PORTLAND



# AMERICANA

OCTOBER, 1919

## The Beginnings of Prohibition



At the time of the separation of Maine and Massachusetts, nearly every person in the new State drank liquor as a matter of course. The most respectable people sold it. Neal Dow says that "many of them were regular attendants upon the ordinances of the church; some were foremost in good words and works. Elders, deacons and Sabbath school teachers competed with each other for customers for liquor, as well as for dry goods and other family supplies, and cheerfully donated generously of profits thus obtained." Men said with Iago, "Good wine is a good creature if it be not abused." But the danger of abuse was recognized, and on March 20, 1821, the Maine Legislature passed a license law regulating the sale of liquor very similar to the law of Massachusetts previously in force. The license fee was \$6.00, and a fine of not over \$50 for common selling and of not over \$10 for a single sale was imposed on persons selling without a license. The licensees were to be persons of "sober life and conversation, and suitably qualified." They were forbidden to allow gambling or excessive drinking on the premises, no liquor could be sold to minors, except travellers, without the special permission of their parents, nor could credit for liquor be given to undergraduates in colleges without the consent of the college authorities.

County attorneys were directed to file information against persons selling without a license, and the half of all fines under \$20 was to go to the informer. In 1824 liquor sellers were ordered to take out a license for each place where they sold liquor. Sheriffs, deputy-sheriffs, constables and tithingmen were directed to furnish the

NOTE.—This narrative is from advance sheets of "History of Maine," by Lucius C. Hatch, (American Historical Society, Inc., New York).



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

selectmen with the names of those who used liquor to excess, and "all good citizens of the State were exhorted to do the same." In 1826 a law forbade the sale of liquor within one hundred rods of a place where an election was being held, but the act did not debar their usual places of prosecuting the same." In 1829 a local option "licensed parties from the pursuit of their ordinary business in law was passed and victuallers or retailers were forbidden to sell wine, spirituous or mixed liquors to be drunk on the premises. This act did not apply to taverners. Moreover, any town at its annual town meeting might authorize its licensing board to allow the sale of liquor to be drunk on the premises on such conditions as might be prescribed by the selectmen. In 1832 the law of 1824 was repealed. In 1833 it was made the duty of the selectmen to insert in the list of subjects to be considered by the annual town meeting that of granting licenses for the sale of liquor to be drunk on the premises. In 1834 all laws regulating the sale of liquor were repealed, and a new law containing most of the provisions of the former acts was passed, but no license was required for, nor any restriction imposed, on the sale of beer, cider, ale, etc.

Meanwhile there had been developing in Maine, a strong temperance movement. Shortly after the close of the War of 1812, sixty-nine citizens of Portland assembled in the Quaker meeting-house and formed a total abstinence society, commonly called from the number of those composing it, Sixty-niners. Among the leaders were two of the principal clergymen of the district, Dr. Payson and Dr. Nichols. In January, 1818, Dr. Payson's church resolved that it considered the use of intoxicating liquors for purposes of entertainment, refreshment or traffic, as a cause of immorality, and a cause of discipline, subjecting the offender to suspension and if persisted in, to excommunication. For years, however, many who earnestly desired to promote the cause of temperance did not advocate total abstinence. A distinction was also drawn between the use of wine, cider, and so forth, and that of whiskey and other "ardent spirits." In 1827 a society whose members were pledged to abstain from distilled spirits was formed in New Sharon. Such societies were also formed that year in Windsor, Buckfield and Gorham.

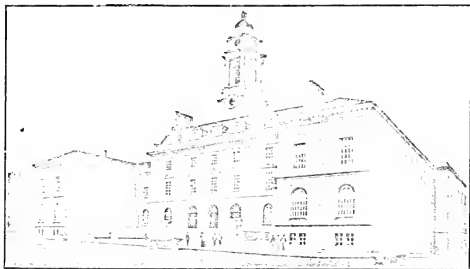
In 1828 a society was formed in Gardiner, whose members pledged themselves that they would not "knowingly vote for a man for any civil office who is in the habit of using ardent spirits or wine to ex-



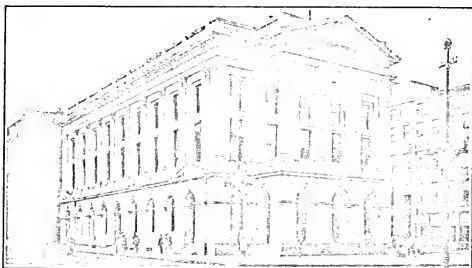








CITY HALL, PORTLAND



POST OFFICE, PORTLAND



UNION STATION, PORTLAND



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

cess." Neal Dow says in his reminiscences: "I think I am safe in saying that the adoption of this pledge was the first action taken anywhere in the State, favoring the introduction of the question in any form into politics." In 1834 the first State convention of temperance societies was held and a State organization was formed. In 1837 it was moved at the annual meeting of the Society to make total abstinence a condition of membership. The opponents of the change, led by ex-Governor King and other prominent men, defeated the proposal, but the result was a secession of many of the more radical members, who formed the Maine Temperance Union. Among the leaders in this movement were Rev. Dr. Tappan of Augusta, Samuel M. Pond of Bucksport, Dr. Isaac Lincoln of Brunswick, Abner Curnburn (Governor of Maine in 1862), Richard D. Rice, afterward a judge of the Supreme Court, and John F. Potter of Augusta. Mr. Potter was later a member of Congress from Wisconsin, and acquired great popularity among the anti-slavery men by accepting a challenge from Roger A. Pryor of Virginia, and naming bowie-knives as the weapons. The duel did not take place, Pryor's seconds refusing to allow him to fight under such conditions.

The records of the Society say, "Voted to adjourn till 2 p. m. with a view to give those members who desired it, an opportunity of forming a new State Society on a pledge of total abstinence from all that intoxicates. A new Society was immediately formed and called the 'Maine Temperance Union,' and about four-fifths if not seven-eighths of the old Society joined the new one. At 2 p. m., met accordingly. The treasurer's report was read and accepted, and some other business done, when General King of Bath observed that he thought those who had joined the new Society ought not to assist in choosing the officers of the old, and after a few observations from members it was voted to adjourn for five minutes, and the members of the Maine Temperance Union retired to the Court House."

The Union voted "that the sole object of this Society shall be to concentrate the efforts of the friends of temperance throughout the State, to diffuse information, and by a moral influence, discourage the use of intoxicating drinks in this community." A resolution was adopted, "that the subject of petitioning the Legislature for prohibiting, under suitable penalties, the sale of intoxicating liquors as a drink, be recommended for discussion at the next meeting of this Society." Neal Dow says, "As far as I am aware, that was the earliest



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

effort made in Maine toward the development of a public sentiment favorable to Prohibition," and he thinks it more than probable that "General Appleton of Portland was the author of the resolution." A committee was appointed to confer with the old Society in regard to financial matters, and the Society transferred the temperance paper, the *Maine Temperance Herald* "and all existing agencies," to the Union. The Bangor *Whig* said of the secession:

We look upon the organization of a new State Temperance Society, upon the principle of abstinence from all that intoxicates, as a good omen. Most certain it is, the measure was called for by every consideration of consistency as well as the best good of the cause of temperance. The truth is the avowed friends of temperance must keep in advance of the mass, or the cause will inevitably suffer. How was it with the old Society? It was formed years ago, when the standard of public sentiment was far in the rear of its present point of elevation. It was found to be lagging behind public sentiment. It had become a dead letter, and it was absolutely necessary that it should be advanced to its present station. Total abstinence is the only safe, the only tenable, the only consistent ground. How very often is it urged, and with such force as to call the blush to the cheek of the avowed friends of temperance, that it is the object of reformers to deprive poor people of New England Rum, while they retain for their own use highly adulterated wines and cordials? How often is it said, give up your wines and we will give up our rum.

The same year a committee of the House of Representatives (of Maine) to whom the subject of the liquor traffic had been referred, reported in favor of prohibition. They stated that a license system made liquor dealing respectable and that it was impossible to enforce regulations for the sale of liquor. "The people will never be satisfied that if the taverner may rightfully vend the article by the glass, to the ruin of his neighbor, it is criminal for the retailer to do the same." They said that the "fathers" who established the license system would probably have forbidden the sale of liquor entirely had they not wrongly believed that alcohol was useful and necessary to humanity. The committee claimed that generally speaking a prohibitory law could be enforced. A bill was reported forbidding the sale of brandy, rum or strong liquors, in less quantities than twenty-eight gallons, except by physicians and apothecaries for medicinal and mechanical purposes. During the debate General Appleton said that sale in large quantities was permitted to meet





## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

the constitutional objection that though the Legislature might regulate it could not prohibit. John Holmes, who was then serving as a member of the House, moved an amendment invalidating after the first of the following September, all contracts in relation to ardent spirits, and the motion was passed with a slight change. Mr. Humphries of Gray wished "to prohibit physicians and apothecaries from selling. The bill gave these individuals a monopoly which would be exceedingly profitable. Apothecary shops would spring up in every quarter by the hundred. The bill would be wholly ineffectual; as much ardent spirits would be sold as now. If any exception was to be made, it should be in favor of taverners." Accordingly, Mr. Humphries moved to strike out the part of the bill relating to physicians and apothecaries, but his amendment was defeated. "An attempt was made to forbid the sale of ardent spirits in *any* quantity, but this also failed. Mr. Codman of Portland said he presumed gentlemen were sincere in declaring alcohol to be a *deadly poison*. He therefore moved to amend by adding a section to provide that if any person in this State shall sell or drink any ardent spirits, he shall be punished, on conviction, by imprisonment for life; the motion did not prevail."

In 1838 Governor Kent said in his first address to the Legislature: "The cause of temperance and that philanthropic movement which has already done so much to check the ravages of the fell destroyer of individual health and happiness, and prolific source of crime and misery—intemperance—depend mainly for their ultimate and perfect success upon moral causes, but may yet receive aid and support from legal enactments which shall put the seal of public reprobation upon the traffic in ardent spirits whenever public sentiment will sustain the strict enforcement of the provisions of such a statute." This was the first time that a Governor of Maine had referred to the subject of temperance in his inaugural address. But no action of importance was taken by the Legislature in regard to the selling of liquor until 1844, when a law was passed construing the act of 1835 to authorize licensing boards to license persons other than inn-keepers, but forbidding them to sell in less quantities than twenty-eight gallons, the whole to be taken away at one time.

Meanwhile a very sharp contest had been going on in the ranks of the new Temperance Union. The radicals favored prohibition, the conservatives wished to rely on moral influence. One year the So-



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

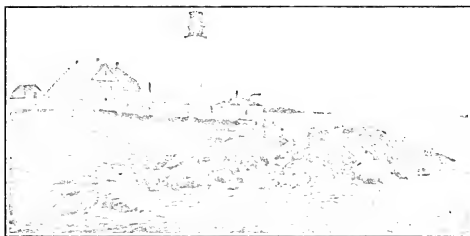
ciety indefinitely postponed a resolution recommending the friends of temperance to use their influence in enforcing the penalties of the law against the sale of strong liquors. The next year it declared that "it is necessary to exercise daily and constant vigilance in detecting the unlawful sale of intoxicating liquors, and to cause the license law to be executed on all those who transgress it." In 1845 the radicals won a decisive victory. Rev. Dr. Dwight of Portland was invited to address the annual meeting of the Union on "Law as a means of promoting the temperance reform." Resolutions were adopted declaring that "individuals engaged in the liquor traffic 'are the most guilty of any criminals known to us' and should be 'both regarded and treated according to their guilt as are other criminals;'" that to patronize a store or tavern in which intoxicating drinks are sold is to countenance and support intemperance."

In 1846 the Union appointed Neal Dow and John T. Walton to represent "the views and wishes of the thousands of our State who have asked by their petitions the passage of a law which shall effectually close up the drinking-houses and tippling-shops." The hearing was held in the Hall of Representatives and a petition fifty-nine feet long, signed by 3,800 citizens of Portland, was festooned over the Speaker's chair. Judge Weston of Augusta presented the arguments of the opponents of prohibition. A prohibition law was passed in the House by a vote of 81 to 42, and in the Senate by one of 23 to 5, and was duly approved by Governor Anderson. The law forbade the sale of spirituous liquors except for medical and mechanical purposes. For such sales the towns were authorized to appoint a limited number of agents, the number varying with the size of the town.

For the next three years the Union devoted itself to endeavoring to secure the enforcement of the law and to obtain amendments which would make it more effective. Neal Dow says of this period:

As long as the law recognized the trade as useful, necessary, and legitimate, those engaged in it cared little for its restraining clauses. The license was more potent in swelling the number of their patrons and the sum of their gains than the restrictions were in protecting the people from the evils inseparable from the business. Now, however, under the law of 1846, matters were different. Now the trade began to show its teeth. The time had come when the fire was the hottest,





PORTLAND HEADLIGHT, PORTLAND HARBOR

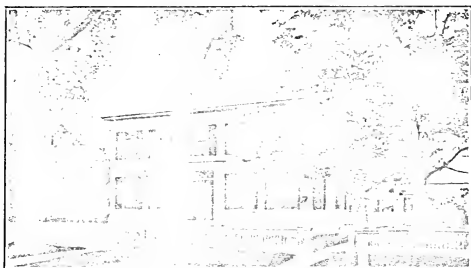


FORT ALLEN PARK, PORTLAND

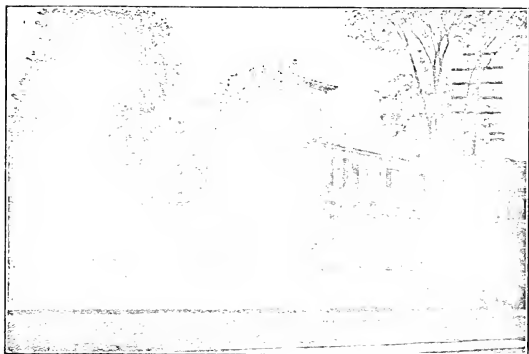


HOME OF THE PEARLS, ORR'S ISLAND





HOME OF HARRIET BEECHER STOWE, BRUNSWICK, WHERE  
"UNCLE TOM'S CABIN" WAS WRITTEN



RESIDENCE OF LATE JAMES G. BLAINE, AUGUSTA





## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

the danger the greatest, and only the most determined and courageous kept on. This was manifest in the absence from the annual meetings of the Union in 1847, 1848 and 1849, of some of its former supporters. They had little taste for the kind of warfare now forced upon them, and perhaps, as to some of them, grave fears as to what the outcome politically might be to themselves or their party.

The vacancies, however, were filled by others, who, though younger, less widely known, and lacking in the prestige and influence of those whose places they took, had all the zeal, persistency, and courage demanded at that stage of the movement. But there were yet to be found some of the old leaders. The calm, cool courage, the earnest, unabated devotion of Appleton, were yet at the service of the cause. The venerable Samuel Fessenden was, as always, to be relied upon, and the devotion of such men, trained in the school of the anti-slavery reform to cherish the courage of their convictions as a priceless treasure, was a tower of strength at this crisis of the movement.

In 1849, a law was enacted which punished by imprisonment in the county jail any person not licensed who should sell or expose for sale during the continuance of any cattle-show or fair any intoxicating drink within two miles thereof. This is the first instance in the legislation of the State where imprisonment was imposed as a penalty for the sale of intoxicating liquors. In 1850, the penalties for the violation of the law were very much increased. Persons selling liquor illegally had been liable to a fine of not less than one nor more than twenty dollars. They were now made punishable by a fine of not less than twenty nor more than three hundred dollars, or imprisonment for not less than thirty days nor more than six months.

Though the passage of the law of 1846 had been a great triumph for the friends of prohibition, its enforcement was far from satisfactory to them. Accordingly, in 1849 they prepared a bill increasing the powers of public officers to search and seize, and allowing private citizens to set the machinery of the law in motion. The bill was passed at the end of the session and Governor Dana availed himself of his constitutional right to retain the bill until the opening of the next session. Many petitions were sent begging him to sign the bill, but in January he returned it to the Legislature with his veto. He argued that the proposed law was altogether too stringent, more so indeed than the Legislature perhaps intended. He claimed that prohibition could not be enforced and that the attempt to do it had increased drunkenness. Undiscouraged, the prohibitionists again



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

introduced a bill similar to that of the year before. It passed the House, but in the Senate the vote was a tie.

In the spring of 1851, Mr. Dow was elected mayor of Portland, with a prohibition city council. In his inaugural address he stated that prohibition could not be enforced without the aid of a law stringent in its provisions and summary in its processes, and commended the subject to them as one eminently worthy of their attention. The city council passed resolutions echoing the opinion of the mayor and he was appointed the head of a committee to go to Augusta, present the resolutions to the Portland representatives, and express the opinions of the city council on the matter to any committee which might be appointed to consider them. Mayor Dow had already prepared a bill. He first carefully revised his bill of the preceding year and then submitted it to a lawyer who was much interested in temperance, Mr. Edward Fox, later judge of the United States District Court. Mr. Fox suggested and the mayor accepted a few changes mainly of a technical nature.

At Augusta, Mr. Dow saw the president of the Senate and the speaker of the House and asked them, if the matter should be referred to a committee, to appoint certain persons whom he named. Both officers agreed to pack the committee as requested. It was duly appointed and unanimously recommended Mr. Dow's bill. The bill passed the House by a vote of 81 to 40. The next day the Senate passed it under a suspension of the rules by a vote of 18 to 10. As soon as the bill had been signed by the president of the Senate, Mr. Dow himself took it to the Governor, John Hubbard. But he had been anticipated. On entering the executive chamber he met half a dozen Democratic leaders coming out. They had gone to demand of Gov. Hubbard that he veto the bill. Several of these men had themselves voted for it. They explained, however, that they lived in close districts and feared for their re-election, but argued that as Governor Hubbard had twice received over 9,000 plurality he might safely disapprove the bill. Neal Dow says of this interview:

Governor Hubbard, however, as he afterwards informed me, reminded those gentlemen that they had voted for the bill. Their record was public. He was bound to believe that their vote, as thus recorded, represented their convictions. It was neither his duty nor his desire to relieve them from the position in which they had placed themselves. They had admitted, in voting for the measure, that they



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

were representing the wishes of their constituents. They must not ask him to disregard the public will that they had obeyed, and heed their private opinions and personal wishes, which they had concealed by their votes. Two sessions of the Legislature, the Governor said, had been occupied in discussing and maturing the subject. It had passed both houses by a vote of about two-thirds. It could not be looked upon, therefore, as hasty and inconsiderate legislation, which alone would authorize the interposition of the veto, a power which the Constitution did not contemplate as part of the ordinary process of legislation. He would not use it in this case unless upon a careful examination of the bill he should find in it defects too grave to be overlooked.

The discussion is said to have been very sharp, the leaders attempting to frighten Governor Hubbard into using his veto. When Mr. Dow entered with the bill, the Governor said nothing of the pressure which had been put on him, but promised to give the subject careful consideration and turned the conversation to general topics. The bill passed the Legislature on Saturday and on Monday the Governor signed it. From this time the temperance question became very closely interwoven with party politics.

\* \* \* \* \*

The prohibitory law gave offense to many who were not rummies. The act granted extensive powers of search and many felt that private rights were invaded. A cry was also raised that the law as enforced was hurting business. But far more injurious to the Republicans was a liquor riot in Portland in which the militia were called out, the mob fired on, several persons injured and one killed. Liquor had been bought for the City Agency and it was claimed that technically Mayor Dow was the owner and had violated his own prohibitory law.

Handbills scattered throughout the city asked, "Where are our vigilant police, who are knowing to the above facts, and who think it their duty to move about in search of the poor man's cider, and often push their search into private houses contrary to every principle of just law? Why are they so negligent of the weightier matters and so eager for the mint and cummin? We call upon them by virtue of Neal Dow's law to seize Neal Dow's liquors and pour them into the street. The old maxim, *Fiat justitia ruat coelum*, means 'Let the lash which Neal Dow has prepared for other backs be applied to his own when he deserves it.' "



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

The opponents of the Maine law were much excited. They considered it a most outrageous and inquisitorial statute which established arbitrary and unreasonable presumption of guilt and that it had been enforced by Mr. Dow in a very severe manner. The report that he had been caught in his own trap and might be publicly proclaimed and punished as a violator of his own law, was received with the greatest joy. On June 3, three men, all thorough-going opponents of the prohibitory law, appeared before Judge Carter of the Police Court, made oath that they had reason to believe and did believe that Neal Dow had liquors intended for illegal sale in the State, in the basement of the city hall; they had brought with them a constable and they demanded that warrants to seize the liquor and to arrest Mr. Dow be issued at once and delivered to their constable, on the ground that fees would be saved by giving it to the officer of the court, Deputy Marshal Ring. The Judge detained the deputy marshal until court adjourned, saying that he ought to remain in attendance. The deputy then proceeded to the city hall; as the casks were not directed to Neal Dow, he hesitated about seizing them, but after consulting the county attorney he did so. Believing that they were as safe where they were as in any other place, he did not remove them but left them in charge of an officer. He properly gave Mr. Dow time for arranging for bail before arresting him.

Meanwhile a crowd had collected near the city hall and much impatience was expressed because the liquors were not seized. Reports of an attack on the agency were brought to the city marshal, the mayor and certain aldermen. Two companies of militia, Captain Green's Rifle Guards and Captain Roberts' Light Guards, were called out. The first company appeared at the hall but with ranks by no means full, was pelted with stones and withdrew. Mayor Dow had given and then countermanded an order to fire.

The excitement of the mob increased, stones were thrown at the agency, forcible rescues were made of men who were arrested by the police, an attempt was made to break down a door of the city hall and get at the liquor. Within were a number of police and the city marshal. The crowd was repeatedly warned to disperse and that any of them entering the building would be shot. One man who was part way through the half broken door was wounded and there was a general discharge of revolvers by the police. Rein-







NEAL DOW .



forcements were also coming from the militia. About two hours after Captain Roberts of the Light Guards received the order from the magistrates, calling out his company, some thirty of his men had assembled at the armory of the Rifle Guards, but they had no ammunition suitable for their guns. Mayor Dow demanded the guns of the Rifles. They were refused and by his direction the Light Guards took them from the racks. Information had come that without prompt assistance the city hall would be stormed and the police sacrificed. Mayor Dow led the troops to the city hall and found one of the doors broken and stones flying through the room. Some of the police had been hurt. No further warning was given to the mob to disperse, but the militia drew up at an open door looking out on Middle Street and fired by sections through the room and the broken door. After this the mob gradually quieted and were then dispersed by the militia. One life had been lost, that of Jonathan Robbins of Deer Isle, a sailor from a vessel in the harbor, and seven of the rioters had been wounded.

The riot had occurred on Saturday night. On Monday a public meeting was held, and F. O. J. Smith, Nathan Clifford and others, made vehement attacks on the mayor. Mr. Smith said that the mayor's resignation should be demanded, and intimated that if necessary forcible measures ought to be taken to obtain it. The meeting unanimously passed resolutions reported by a committee which was unfavorable to the mayor, and provided for a committee to investigate the affair of Saturday. A resolution was offered from the floor and unanimously passed, calling on Mayor Dow to resign on account of his conduct in purchasing the liquor.

On Tuesday Mr. Dow was tried in the municipal court on the charge of having liquor in his possession intended for illegal sale. Nathan Clifford appeared for the prosecution, William Pitt Fessenden for the defense. Judge Carter ruled that the city had authorized the original purchase, and dismissed the respondent. An inquest, held on the body of Robbins, declared that he came to his death while engaged in a riot. Another coroner's jury was formed composed of enemies of the mayor, who reported that Robbins had been illegally killed, and called on the grand jury to determine if the mayor should be indicted and, if so, whether for murder or manslaughter, but the grand jury took no action. A committee of investigation was appointed by the city council. Some of its mem-



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

bers, such as William Willis and Rev. Dr. Dwight, were among the most respected citizens of Portland, but they were generally friends of prohibition. Their report fully endorsed the action of the mayor.

The papers of the city in discussing the riot divided on political lines. The Democratic *Argus* and the Whig *State of Maine* bitterly condemned Dow; for the course of the latter paper there was at least excuse, since the owner, John A. Poor, had received a bullet through his hat, the night of the riot.

The *Argus* in describing what it considered to be the temper of the mob, said: "There was a pretty strong current of feeling, that no great moral or legal wrong would be done by letting Mr. Dow's liquor into the gutter (the common receptacle of the article here, and no doubt the best one when properly got into it), and it was this feeling on the part of a few, and curiosity on the part of the others, which caused the assemblage on Saturday night. The worst that any one of these assembled had in view—was the spilling of a little liquor—a few panes of glass broken, and some other injuries done to the door of the liquor store, would have been all, and the crowd would finally have dispersed of themselves."

The *Advertiser*, on the other hand, took the attitude adopted by the investigating committee appointed by the city council, who said, "Here was a question not merely whether a quantity of liquor should be destroyed, for that would be of comparatively small importance, but whether law should be vindicated and triumphant, and the peace and property of the city be preserved, or whether mob violence should rule the hour, trample upon law and order, and break down the great barrier which protects the life, the property, and the happiness of our people."

There was much dispute as to the character of Robbins, and also as to whether he was killed by the police or the militia. The latter point would have been important had the mayor been tried for murder or manslaughter, but as he certainly ordered the military to fire it has little bearing on his moral guilt or innocence. There was the dispute usual in cases of riot as to the size and ferocity of the mob. It is possible that a small body of police well drilled and well handled might have dispersed the mob earlier in the evening. Attempts were made to make arrests and warnings were given to the rioters to disperse, but there seems to have been no action by the



## THE BEGINNINGS OF PROHIBITION

police in a body. It is fair to remember that the police were few in number; that they had no uniforms, only a badge, and there was contradictory testimony as to whether one of them, who was the most active, had his badge on or not. It is doubtful if Mayor Dow was warranted in his first order to fire. Had it been obeyed there would probably have been a dreadful slaughter. Alderman Carleton, who was with Dow and was a supporter of his measures, said that he would not have given such an order. And without the consent of two magistrates it would not have been legal. Moreover, the mayor had no right to call out the militia. He acted in good faith but investigation showed that the statute on which he relied had been repealed by a later act. It is possible also that during that exciting night Mr. Dow was guilty of a technical violation of law in demanding the muskets of the Light Guards. On the other hand, the opponents of the mayor violated the spirit of the law in the original prosecution of Mr. Dow, and it is probable they had arranged for the liquor to be taken from the constable whom they brought to serve the warrant, and spilled into the gutter. If the mayor bore the loss he would be \$1,600 out of pocket; if the city assumed it, this could be used against the mayor politically. But these men played with fire. The mob spirit once roused cannot be controlled, and the devisers of the original comparatively innocent plot against the mayor must bear a considerable part of the blame of the tragedy that followed.

Mayor Dow is undoubtedly responsible for the firing of the militia through the agency door, but the conditions were such as to justify him. The riot proved very injurious to the Republicans, their opponents resorting to the grossest misrepresentations concerning it. Mr. Dow says in his reminiscences: "The country districts were flooded with circulars full of misstatements and pictures representing officers shooting women and children who had gathered to see liquors seized, or who were passing the stores where liquors were kept. One of these is before me while I write, representing a company of uniformed soldiers firing under my orders into a throng of men, women and children, passing on the opposite sidewalk, peacefully attending in broad daylight to their legitimate pursuits."





## Art and Literature in Lowell



N 1904 the Lowell Art Association was revived. On a snowy March evening a private view was held of a general exhibition of paintings in the high school hall. The setting was not especially favorable to works of art; but in spite of that limitation the pictures looked well. The exhibition met with such success that the officers of the Association were encouraged to believe that Lowell might eventually have such exhibitions as are of seasonal interest at Worcester, Providence, Springfield and other New England cities of about the same population. The revival of the Lowell Art Association soon led to nationally significant consequences.

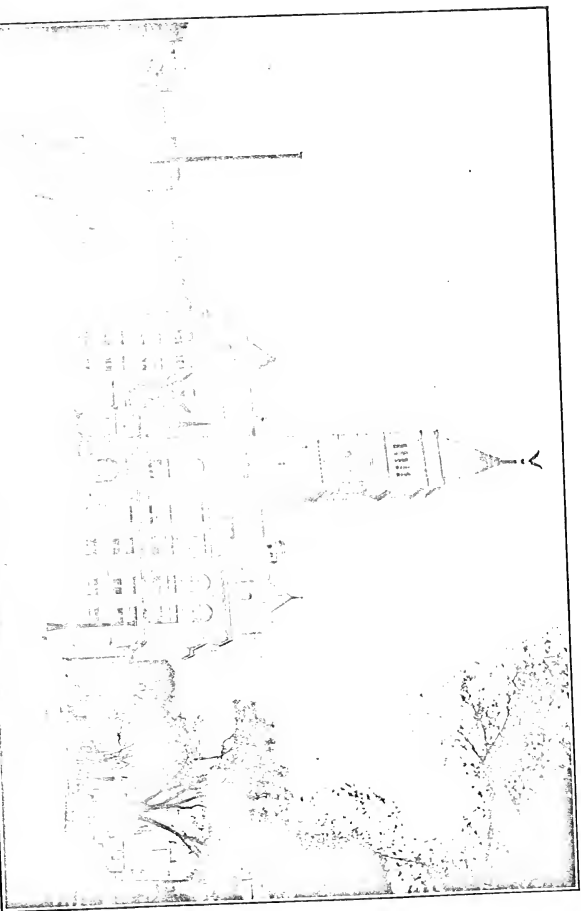
Following the death of the artist, James McNeill Whistler, in London, came the Whistler Memorial Exhibition of the Copley Society of Boston in March, 1903, and with this an intensive cult of Whistleriana throughout the United States. Before this furore had died away, President Joseph A. Nesmith, of the Lowell Art Association, had conceived the idea of buying the plain, solid and not inartistic house in Worthen street in which Whistler was born. The undertaking, involving many difficulties of financing, was finally completed and on December 14, 1908, distinguished guests, including the Governor of the Commonwealth, met at the Whistler House. The interior was found to have been redecorated in a mode appropriate to the late artist's liking for quiet, unobtrusive effects, with the main hall, forty by sixteen feet in dimensions, finished in grey friar's cloth. In this exhibition gallery was hung a collection of paintings by American artists lent by the Copley Gallery, Boston. In the then library, now the Francis Room, and the dining room, were hung the three pictures already acquired by the Association—two works by David Neal, also born in Lowell, and one by Frederic P. Vinton.

The exercises of the dedicatory evening, which were followed by a very large audience, were not without their exciting episode. Joseph

---

NOTE—These pages relating to Art and Literature in Lowell, Massachusetts, are from advance sheets of a history of that city by Mr. Frederick W. Coburn, (Lewis Hist. Pub. Co., New York).





CITY HALL AND MONUMENT SQUARE, LOWELL.

Showing Monument Marking Burial Place of the First Three Men Killed in the Civil War



Pennell, illustrator, of Philadelphia, an admirer of Whistler, was unable to be present at the dedication, but sent a congratulatory letter in which he went out of his way to denounce failure of Americans properly to appreciate his friend. Governor Curtis Guild made a spirited reply, beginning with the following words: "I shall not go into joint debate with one who is absent. I shall not discuss the expressions in regard to the United States to which Mr. Pennell has given utterance. I merely desire to file my opposition to the opinion these express. The appreciation of art, the appreciation of service to humanity, has no stronger, no more enduring home than among our people, the people of the United States. Some of us may regret statements that Mr. Whistler may or may not have made. It is not necessary to discuss that question. This memorial is erected to him because he was a great artist, and because as a great artist he performed a service to the world and to humanity."

Publicity on a national scale naturally followed the opening of the Whistler House. Special articles on the event were written for the New York *Herald* by Frank L. Baker and for the New York *Evening Post* by F. W. Coburn. *The Outlook* printed the following editorial note on January 9, 1909:

Henceforth Lowell, Massachusetts, will be known not merely as the city of cotton mills. According to the familiar anecdote, James McNeill Whistler "did not choose to be born in Lowell." But he was. In a plain, substantial house, then the residence of Major Whistler, of the Locks and Canals Company, the author of "The Gentle Art of Making Enemies" first saw the light. Last week, by the generosity of Lowell citizens and others, the house was dedicated as a memorial museum of art. This is as it should be. An American memorial to Whistler is appropriate, because he was born in this country, owed his education to American schools and colleges and because all his early traditions were American. The Whistler House is to be not the only Whistler memorial in Lowell. A replica of the Rodin memorial, to be placed in the Chelsea Embankment, London, will shortly be erected in Lowell. The Chelsea memorial is a labor of love on the part of the great French sculptor who was also Whistler's friend. The city of Lowell is now uniquely distinguished; it is the only community in America with sufficiently initiative and local pride to mark the birthplace of an American painter by two such memorials.

The project for a Rodin statue in Lowell, to which reference was made in the *Outlook's* article, is one which an untoward course of



events destined to preclude from quick fulfillment. In the summer previous to the formal opening of the Whistler House the Lowell Art Association received from Mr. Pennell an offer of the only replica to be made of the memorial statue which Rodin had promised to do for erection in Chelsea. The money to defray the prime costs had been subscribed in England and France. The price asked for the replica was very low—only three thousand dollars. Lowell is not a wealthy city and money for artistic purposes comes hard; but a committee of the Association, headed by Philip S. Marden, went upon the street and practically in a day brought in pledges that secured to Lowell the promise of a statue which at least two leading American art museums had hoped to have.

Since the opening of the Whistler House, the Lowell Art Association has had a generally prosperous existence, under the presidency of Mr. Nesmith and secretaryship of Mary Earl Wood. The organization in point of numbers is a large one. Its activities have been many, and it has endeavored to make its home on Worthen street a focus of the artistic and literary interests of the community. Exhibitions of paintings, drawings and etchings by the foremost American artists have been shown from time to time in the downstairs rooms. The house has also given Lowell what it never had before, a studio building. It has likewise furnished quarters of the local College Club, and for a literary society.

In the second year after the renovation of the house, it was decided to keep green the memory of James Bieheno Francis by dedicating a room to his name and fame. The dedicatory exercises included reminiscences of the Francis family by Judge Hadley, Mr. Herschell and the Rev. Dr. Chambre. The Staigg portrait of Mr. Francis was removed from City Hall and placed over the fireplace in this room which perpetuates the memory of the distinguished engineer.

An interesting exhibition of works by artists born in Lowell, or otherwise connected with the city, was made in December, 1915, at the Whistler House by the Art Association. The tutelary genius of the house was represented by a slight but piquant study of a young woman's head, said to be the preliminary sketch for "Little Miss Alexander," which was lent by Mr. Frank Gair Macomber, of Boston; a small marine made at Ostend, owned by Mrs. John Briggs Potter, of Boston, and several etchings. By David Neal were two





paintings owned by the Association, and several early drawings. Willard L. Metcalf's "The Partridge Woods" was lent by Harry Newton Redman, of the New England Conservatory of Music. The painter of "Monadnock," Mr. Phelps, was seen favorably in the "Fading Light," lent by Miss N. P. E. Robbins. By Walter L. Dean there was a marine "U. S. S. Charleston," owned by Mrs. Charles H. Allen. Sarah Wyman Whitman's portrait of the younger Frederic Greenhalge was of a little youth of six years. Alfred Ordway's portrait of "Isabel" revealed this conscientious artist in a characteristic work. Thomas B. Lawson's manner was seen in the full-length portrait of Daniel Webster, lent by the City Library, and in a still life depicting some realistic malaga grapes. John Coggeshall's "Sea and Cliffs," and a landscape; Mary Earl Wood's portraits of General A. W. Greeley and Miss Betty Eastman; Adelbert Ames' "Interior" and his sculptured Indian head; a self portrait by Mrs. Andrew Marshall (Jessie Ames); a portrait of Mrs. Butler Ames by Mrs. Oakes Ames; "Moat Mountain in March" and "Northwest Wind," both agreeable landscapes, by the president of the Association, Mr. Nesmith; several small sculptures by Louise Allen, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Charles H. Allen; wax miniatures by Miss Ruth Burke; metal work by Laurin H. Martin and enamels by Miss Florence Nesmith; Miss Elizabeth Walsh's portrait of "Mistress Mary;" a pastel head by Miss Elizabeth Irish; a pencil drawing of the Culebra Cut, by Clifton Kimball; a drawing in color by Mrs. E. C. Pulsifer; the originals of two illustrative drawings made for the Boston *Transcript*, by Frederick W. Coburn; a trio of etchings by Lester G. Hornby, certainly the most brilliant worker in black and white with the exception of Whistler ever to come out of Lowell—these works made up a remarkably creditable exhibition the fame of which extended beyond the municipal borders.

A city to which travelers resort because of its treasures and traditions of fine art Lowell is not, and perhaps will not become such in the time of people now living. The period in which the community grew up was one singularly characterized by debasement of the arts of design, and, though the textile industry is one that naturally lends itself to the application of art to material, the general influences of the time were against products that combined beauty and utility.

The larger history of the deterioration of the arts in the nineteenth century—a degeneration by no means confined to the so-called

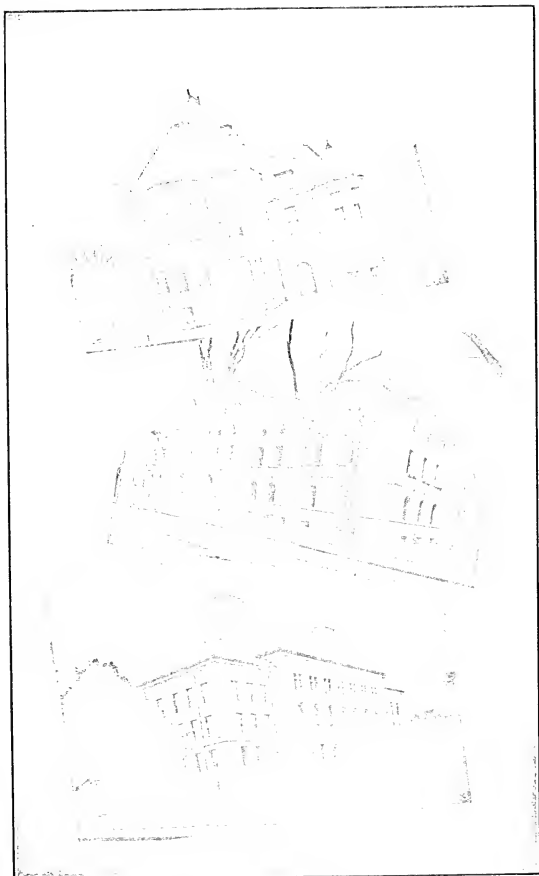


fine arts, architecture, painting and sculpture, but more seriously affecting the entire range of decorative art—has yet to be authoritatively written. Just what happened in the minds and hearts of men throughout the civilized countries of Europe and America that almost simultaneously they abandoned older standards of taste and esthetic honesty, is still somewhat mysterious. Enough, that by general admission this thing happened: a progressive decline of public appreciation of artistic values from the first decades of the century down to about 1880, since which era there has been a slight though perceptible recovery.

The arts of design rise and fall together. Any considerable production of genuinely beautiful pictures and statuary is not to be looked for in a time and land whose humble household utensils and articles of personal adornment are tawdry and ugly. Despite the professional skill of many of their practitioners and their fervid devotion to the traditions of their great calling, the fine arts of the middle nineteenth century in this country and abroad sunk to a very low ebb. Artists, except for a few itinerant portrait painters whose livelihood was imperiled when the daguerreotype became popular, were hardly to be encountered in New England at this era outside of Boston, at the time when one of the greatest of artists of modern times was born on Worthen street, Lowell. Even at "the Hub of the Universe," as Dr. Holmes a little later called it, there was nothing corresponding to the present large representation of architects, painters, sculptors, and workers in the arts and crafts. Washington Allston, who lived down to 1843, represented an old tradition of painting, as did Gilbert Stuart and his daughter Jane. In this era there settled in Boston the giant backwoodsman, Chester Harding, and there grew up into something of a portraitist the energetic and diminutive Healey, both of whom are represented in the collection of works now in the Lowell Public Library. The Boston Art Club was founded in 1854, mainly through the efforts of Alfred Ordway, of a family long connected with Lowell. Art in Boston was of very minor interest until after the Civil War, when William Morris Hunt and his social associates introduced a new understanding of the artistic practices and ideals of the French nation, and when the Museum of Fine Arts entered upon its honorable career of public usefulness.

The same impetus which was given to the practice of the arts in





1. MEMORIAL BUILDING AND PUBLIC LIBRARY
2. MIDDLESEX COUNTY COURT HOUSE
3. STATE NORMAL SCHOOL





FORT HILL PARK, LOWELL  
One of the Finest Natural Parks in the Country



LUCY LARCOM PARK, LOWELL  
Vista Showing Canal in the Heart of the City





Boston in the seventies was felt quite distinctly in Lowell. Interest, indeed, in the art of painting was probably keener about 1880 than either before or since. John I. Coggeshall, long identified with artistic occupations in Lowell, recalls how he came from Boston to take a position as engraver and designer and engraver, and how he discovered with much surprise that a little coterie of artists and collectors made Lowell much of an "art centre." Many people were then watching the progress of William Preston Phelps, a young man from New Hampshire, who had gone to Munich for training in the days of Frank Duveneck's best teaching. David Neal, born in Lowell and long an instructor at Munich, was then spending much time in his native city. To visit him came frequently Walter Shirlaw, who had settled in New York. Thomas B. Lawson represented the older coterie of portrait painters of Massachusetts. Several gifted amateurs and art students helped to make up a most agreeable coterie. This was the period in which, as elsewhere noted, the Lowell Art Association first came into being. After some years of activity it became quiescent to be revived, as related, in the present century.

The last decade of the nineteenth century was one in which the arts fared badly in Lowell. Mr. Phelps left the city in 1889 to live at Chesham, New Hampshire. The Association had become a merely perfunctory organization. The panic of 1893 was followed by a long depressed era. Hardly any one who could be called a professional painter or sculptor plied his calling in Lowell. Finally, in the present century, as told on a preceding page of this narrative, the Art Association was suddenly revived, the Whistler House became its headquarters, with studios at which artistic work was done, and Lowell began to be known as a city not altogether dead to the influences of the arts.

Lowell in 1917 had no Art Museum, and very little outdoor art of any kind. In the City Library, as already mentioned, are a few portraits of fathers of the city, all dignified and imposing. Among them are "Dr. Elisha Huntington," T. B. Ianson; "Daniel Webster," "Nathan Appleton," "Patrick T. Jackson" and "John A. Lowell," S. P. A. Healey; "Kirk Boott" and "Abbott Lawrence," Chester Harding. At the entrance to the library is a small but effective mural decoration representing "Industry," by Vesper Lincoln George, of Boston, the gift of Joseph A. Coram.

Of public monuments, the one conspicuous and celebrated work is



the Victory Monument in Monument Square, in front of the City Hall. "Miss Victory," as a subsequent generation of smart newspaper reporters have liked to call her, came to Lowell in the summer of 1867, and was presented to the city by Dr. J. C. Ayer at unveiling on the Fourth of July. The work is an angel figure, in bronze, extending a wreath of victory in one hand, and a sheaf holding a sheaf of wheat in the other hand. It is a replica of the figure in front of the Royal Palace at Munich. Despite the German origin of the Winged Victory, no proposal to remove it from the prominent position has, so far as known, been entertained.

Lowell cemeteries include a few notable monuments of which the most celebrated are the Butler memorial in the Hildreth burying ground, the sculptural work of the late Bela Lyon Pratt; the Louisa M. Wells memorial in the Lowell cemetery, Evelyn B. Longman, sculptor; and the Moses Greeley Parker mausoleum in the Lowell cemetery.

The subjoined notes concern a few of the principal artists who have lived at Lowell or otherwise been connected with the city:

Abbott, Holker—President for many years of the Copley Society of Boston. One of the younger sons of Judge Josiah G. Abbott, born at Lowell in 1858. He was trained at the School of Drawing and Painting of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, of which Otto Grundmann was director. For a time he shared a studio in Boston with W. H. W. Bicknell, painter and etcher. Later he did more or less work in ecclesiastical decoration at his home studio, Wellesley Hills. His great service to art has been his wise and progressive management of the Copley Society (originally the Boston Art Students' Association), whose loan exhibitions of important masterpieces have international celebrity. Mr. Abbott's marked executive capacity, his uniformly courteous bearing and his wide acquaintance in the United States and abroad, have made him an ideal director of such enterprises as the Copley Society's exhibitions of works by John Singer Sargent, Whistler, Monet, Sorolla and E. C. Tarbell. Since 1911 Mr. Abbott has been a trustee of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts.

Button, Albert Prentice—This able painter, long resident in Boston, was born in Lowell and received his first instruction from a private teacher from whose studio he went to the Cowles Art School, Boston, and to the classes of the Boston Art Club, then taught by Ernest L. Major. His work has been shown in most of the large cities of the United States. He has exhibited at the Whistler House.



The Boston Art Club purchased his work entitled "On the Sands at Day's Close."

Coggeshall, John I.—A native of Boston, who studied drawing, design and engraving, and who came to Lowell in the seventies to do special work as an engraver. Mr. Coggeshall early became intimate with Mr. Phelps, from whom he received valuable criticism in landscape painting. He has practiced the allied professions of painting and engraving for many years at Lowell and, in the summers, at Cape Ann, where he has a studio where he has taught many classes of art students. He is a sincere and able painter, and has been represented at various exhibitions.

Dean, Walter Lofthouse—This son of Benjamin and Mary Ann (French) Dean, who was related to several of the best known families of the region, was born at Lowell, June 4, 1854. The marked artistic bent in the family seems to have come from Walter Dean's grandfather, Benjamin Dean, of Clitheroe, England, who was an engraver and designer and who entered the employ of the Merrimack Print Works in 1829. Mr. Dean studied art at the Massachusetts State Normal Art School, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology and the Julian Academy, Paris. He settled in Boston, where for many years he was one of the most prominent members of the Paint and Clay Club, the Art Club and the Society of Water Color Painters. His large picture "Peace," depicting several units of the White Squadron in Boston harbor, was one of the notable works of the American section at the Chicago Exposition. His canvases were seen in most of the important general exhibitions for more than quarter of a century. He was always fascinated by the sea and was a life member, trustee and one time commodore of the Boston Yacht Club. He made several voyages out of Gloucester on fishing vessels. Shortly before his death, in 1913, he spent an entire summer nominally as ship's carpenter (since the law would not permit his going as passenger) aboard one of the whalers out of New Bedford. During this voyage, which was confined to the North Atlantic ground off Cape Hatteras, he made valuable sketches and studies of present-day whaling operations. His untimely decease was universally regretted among his fellow-artists and other friends.

Foley, Margaret F.—Sculptor and cameo cutter. Miss Foley was one of the editors of *The Lowell Offering*. She was born in Canada and came to Lowell to teach at Westford Academy. "While there," writes Mrs. Robinson, "she boarded in Lowell, and on Saturday afternoons she taught classes in drawing and painting, and among her pupils was Lucy Larcom. She always had a piece of clay or a cameo in some stage of development upon which she worked in spare moments." While in Lowell she made a medallion portrait of Gilman Kimball, M. D., which was locally celebrated. She gave up teaching at Westford and for a time worked as an operative on the



## ART IN LOWELL

Merrimack Corporation. Her contributions to *The Offering* were poems signed "M. F. F." After some years she went to Boston, where she opened a studio. Her struggle for a livelihood was at first bitter, though there was some demand for her portrait heads and ideal heads in cameo. One of her supporters was the Rev. Theodore Parker, whose portrait she made. She finally secured means to take a studio at Rome, where she numbered among her friends Harriet Hosmer, Mrs. Jameson, William Wetmore Story, William and Mary Howitt. She practiced her profession with success down to her death in 1877. Among her portrait medallions were those of Charles Sumner, Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, William Cullen Bryant and other literary people. She made many ideal figures such as those of Jeremiah, Pasquaccia, The Fountain, The Timid Bather, Excelsior, Cleopatra, and Viola.

Hobbs, Louise Allen—A daughter of Hon. Charles H. Allen, born at Lowell and trained in sculpture at the Rhode Island School of Design, Providence. Mrs. Hobbs began to exhibit about 1912, and almost immediately took a prominent place among American sculptors. Her work, usually conceived in a new classic spirit, has been seen at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, the Albright Gallery, Buffalo, and many other seasonal exhibitions of American art.

Hornby, Lester G.—Illustrator and etcher, born in Lowell. He was trained in the art schools of Boston and served an apprenticeship as a newspaper illustrator, acquiring quite remarkable facility. In 1906 his illustrative drawings which appeared under the title of "An Artist's Sketchbook of Old Marblehead" attracted favorable attention. Soon afterwards he began to show etchings at the Doll & Richards gallery, Boston. He made plates in Paris and at various places in Spain and North Africa. His work was favorably received in Paris. To-day he is among the foremost of the world's etchers. On January 25, 1911, he lectured on the art of etching before a large audience.

Lawson, T. B.—This portrait painter, originally of Newburyport was resident in Lowell for many years. Before the Civil War he also practiced his profession in the South. His portrait of Daniel Webster was one of his most noted works. He made excellent still-life studies as well as portraits.

Martin, Laurin H.—The arts and crafts movement, so prominent in England, has an able Lowell representative in Mr. Martin, trained as a metal worker in England. His productions in silver and other metals are familiar to all who follow the exhibitions of the Boston Society of Arts and Crafts.

Metcalf, Willard Leroy—This painter was born at Lowell, July 1, 1858, a son of Greenleaf Willard and Margaret Jane (Gallup) Metcalf. He was educated in the public schools and in 1875 was apprenticed to a wood engraver in Boston. There he received instruc-





tion in landscape painting from George L. Brown, then at the height of his career. He was the first student to enter the newly formed school of drawing and painting of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts, and there he received a scholarship. He had two years of painting in New Mexico and Arizona and then in 1883 he went to Paris, where he entered the Académie Julian, studying under Boulanger and Lefebvre. In 1889 he settled in New York City. He has at various times taught at Cooper Institute and the Art Students' League of New York. He has had medals and prizes at all the recent expositions. He was one of "Ten American Painters" who seceded from the Society of American Artists in 1897, and who have since then regularly exhibited together. His great professional successes began in 1907 in Boston, where an exhibition of his work at the St. Botolph Club aroused admiration. Since then he has had about all the honors that can come to an American artist. He is well represented in the permanent collections of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts and other museums.

Nesmith, Joseph Aaron—Mr. Nesmith was born at Lowell, March 25, 1877. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1891. After a brief business experience in Virginia he settled in Lowell, where he has looked after the extensive Nesmith interests. To the public away from Lowell he is best known as a talented painter and as president of the Lowell Art Association and prime mover in the project to preserve the Whistler House. He has painted much landscape and has exhibited at the Twentieth Century Club, Boston, and elsewhere.

Neal, David—Next to Whistler, David Neal is the Lowell-born painter who unquestionably gained most celebrity in his lifetime. His technique was founded on that of a school which has somewhat lost its popularity in later years, and many of his pictures are of greater historical than of present artistic consequence. His close association with German art during most of his career may prove not to have helped his eventual standing. The fact remains that during his early and middle lifetime he was one of the foremost figures in European art; his was one of the few American names that practically everybody who followed the international art expositions was familiar with. He was born at Lowell in October, 1837, a son of Stephen B. and Mary M. Dolloff Neal. His first schooling was in the old Mann School. As a young boy he went to New Orleans to do clerical work. Thence, at the age of fifteen, he joined his father, who, like so many Lowell men, had gone to California during the gold fever. He was apprenticed to a wood engraver and soon became an expert in this artistic craft. In 1861 he went to Munich, which continued to be his permanent home down to his death, May 2, 1915. In 1862 he entered the Bavarian Royal Academy, where he studied for two years under the Chevalier Einmuller, of the Royal



Bavarian Glass Works, the gentleman who later became his father-in-law. He presently won recognition with his studies of architectural subjects, such as "The Chapel of the Kings, Westminster Abbey," and "St. Mark's, Venice," both exhibited at the Munich International Exhibition of 1869. In 1876 his most famous work, "The First Meeting of Mary Stuart and Rizzio," won the gold medal of the Royal Bavarian Academy and established the young American's reputation as a strong and vigorous painter. It was shown in London, New York and elsewhere and eventually was bought by the late Darius Ogden Mills. "The Return from the Chase," of the same period, belonged to the late John Bloodgood, and another version of the same subject was acquired by Moses T. Stevens, of North Andover. Other works of note were the "James Watt," shown at the London Royal Academy in 1874 and the property of Lord Mayor B. S. Phillipps; "Cromwell Visiting Milton," now at the Cleveland Public Library; "Nuns at Prayer," in the Royal Gallery, Stuttgart; "The Burgomaster," "The Return" and "Trust." On his numerous visits to the United States, Mr. Neal painted upwards of seventy portraits, including those of Whitelaw Reid, the first Mrs. W. C. Whitney, the twin daughters of D. Ogden Mills, Robert Garrett and Professor Samuel Green, of Princeton University. His last works were portraits of the three New Jersey signers of the Declaration of Independence, ordered by the New Jersey Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution. Mr. Neal was survived by two sons, Max Neal, a dramatist, of Munich, and Heinrich Neal, Capellmeister at Heidelberg.

Ordway, Alfred—Founder of the Boston Art Club in 1854, of which he was first secretary and treasurer. In 1859 he was elected president. From 1856 to 1863 he was chairman of the exhibitions of paintings at the Boston Athenaeum. He painted much landscape in rather a tight, literal way, but with admirable fidelity.

Phelps, William Preston—This landscape painter, whose work is found in many Lowell homes, was born at Chesham, New Hampshire. He came to Lowell as a sign painter. His efforts to do more artistic work than that of most men in commercial lines were noted sympathetically by many Lowell people, and he was enabled twice to go abroad for periods of study at Munich and Paris. During the eighties he had a studio in Lowell which, as already related, was a rendezvous for all who were interested in the arts of design. Inheriting the ancestral farm at Chesham, in 1889 he left Lowell, where for many years he painted Mount Monadnock from almost every conceivable viewpoint and under every atmospheric condition. He exhibited frequently in Lowell and Boston. About 1914 he ceased painting and in 1917 it was found that his mental condition was such as to make it necessary to commit him to an asylum for the insane. As a painter of landscape and cattle pieces he gained in the years



1880-1900 a reputation that was thoroughly well deserved, and his great "Canyon of the Colorado," painted in Arizona, was extensively exhibited.

Wood, Mary Earl—Descended from Captain John Ford and other pioneers of the Lowell district, the present secretary of the Lowell Art Association, was born in Lowell and educated in drawing and painting at the school of the Boston Museum of Fine Arts. She is a thoroughly trained and very sincere and competent painter. For some years past she has had studios in Lowell and Boston. Among her many portraits for public places have been those of the late Frank F. Coburn, principal successively of the Lowell high school and State normal school; Charles W. Morey, principal of the Highland grammar school; Dr. John J. Colton, and many that have been privately commissioned. As secretary of the Association, Mrs. Wood has arranged many of the exhibitions and lectures given at the Whistler House.

Walsh, Elizabeth Morse—One of the younger painters of Massachusetts, born at Lowell and trained at the Museum of Fine Arts School, where early in the European war she was awarded the Paige traveling scholarship which, in more normal times, sends its holder to Europe for several years of intensive study. Miss Walsh in 1918 was waiting for conditions to become favorable for taking advantage of her honor and opportunity. She meantime had already exhibited professionally in Boston, Lowell and other cities.

Whistler, James Abbot McNeill—Born at Lowell, July 10, 1834. Died in London, 1903. Although much has been said about Whistler elsewhere, he was to such an extent the most famous personage who ever came out of Lowell that his career and connection with our city should be rather fully noticed. The salient facts, as admiring contemporaries saw them, have never been more succinctly set forth than by the late Charles M. Kurtz, director of the Art Museum at Buffalo, in the catalogue which he wrote for the St. Louis Exposition in 1904. "Among modern artists," said Mr. Kurtz, "no man has been more discussed, more admired, more condemned, more appreciated, or more misunderstood, than the late Mr. Whistler. And there has been no greater artistic personality in the world for many a day. Subtle in feeling and in artistic vision, exquisite in his power of discriminating selection and the delicacy and charm of his interpretation, as well as in his technique; with rare sense of color and its harmonious combinations, Mr. Whistler was a distinguished figure in the world's art. He was born in Lowell, Massachusetts, in 1834. For a time he was a student at West Point. In 1857 he was studying painting, under Gleyre, in Paris. He lived and painted in England, France and Italy; but his work shows the influence of Japan rather than that of any other country—and this influence was digested and assimilated. His work was distinctively his own. As an etcher he has no superior



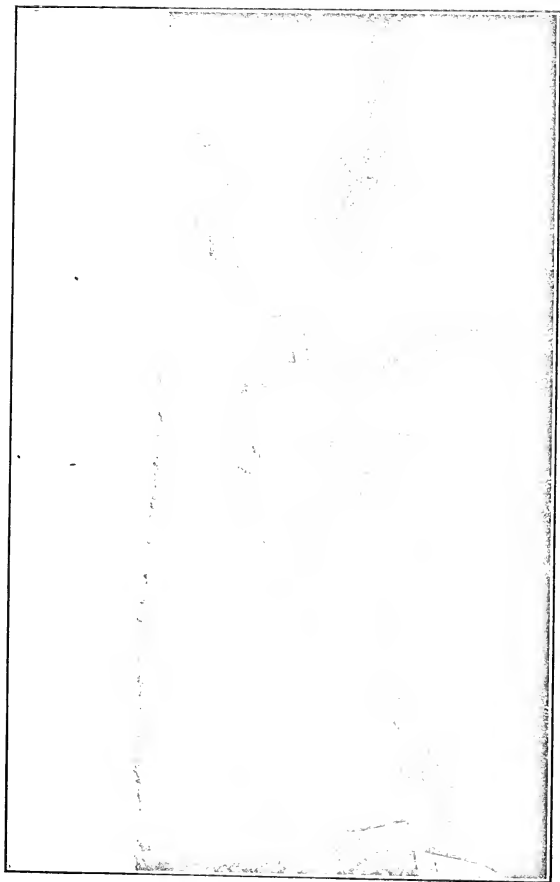
in the history of art. In his later years he was the recipient of many medals and decorations which honored the artistic perspicacity of the donors. He was a member of the Royal Society of British Artists; the Société Nationale des Beaux Arts, Paris; president of the International Society of Sculptors, Painters and Gravers, London; honorary member of the Royal Academy of Saint Luke, Rome; honorary member of the Royal Academy of Dresden; Officer of the Legion of Honor, Knight of the Order of Saint Michael of Bavaria, Commander of the Order of the Crown of Italy, etc., etc. He was accorded the Grand Prix at the Paris Exposition, 1900. He is represented in the Gallery of the Luxembourg, Paris; the Corporation Gallery, Glasgow, etc., etc. He died in London in 1903."

That enthusiasts, of whom Mr. Kurtz was one of very many, probably have overstated Whistler's claims to a place among the very greatest artists, does not affect the circumstance that he certainly achieved greater celebrity in his own day than did any other American born painter. Just how the future will regard his art is still questionable. Some of his best trained fellow professional artists always regarded him as a gifted amateur. Although he was serious and plucky when in his studio by himself, there were difficulties in the art of painting which he was never able to overcome on account of a deficient technique.

Whistler's association with Lowell was slight. The family was southern. The father, Major George Washington Whistler, an able engineer, who achieved a fine reputation through building the Shore Line railway, was called to Lowell to direct the Locks and Canals Company. The family occupied the house in Worthen street which is now known as the Whistler house. Tradition has it that the future artist was born in the ell; though one of his ardent admirers has insisted that Mrs. Whistler must have gone to bed in a front chamber; and this accords with the recollection of members of the Brownell family who subsequently occupied the house. The child's baptism at St. Anne's is recorded in Dr. Theodore Edson's handwriting in the parish register. The Lowell Art Association received a small contribution toward its purchase of the house from Mrs. Anna S. Magoon, of Chelmsford, aged eighty-five, who sat behind the Whistler family at St. Anne's. She told a representative of the *Courier-Citizen* that she distinctly remembered the regular advent of the Whistler folk on Sunday mornings and that she had a faint recollection of the day their baby, afterwards the illustrious artist, was born. While the Whistler child was still a baby the father was invited to build a railroad in Russia, to connect the capitals of St. Petersburg and Moscow. In the semi-barbaric splendor of the city on the Neva the boyhood of James McNeill Whistler was passed. As a youth he returned to this country to enter West Point, from which he was not graduated "because silicon was not a gas." There is no

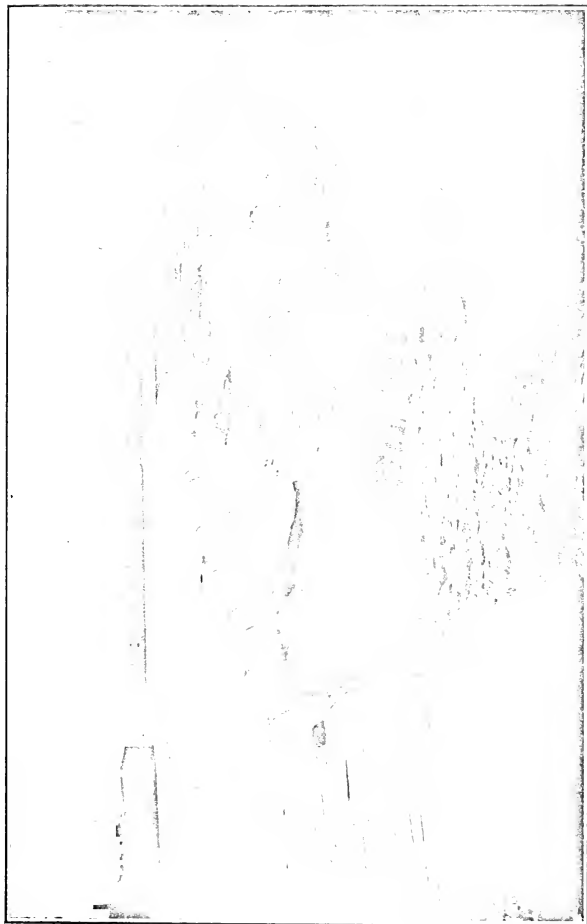






LOOKING DOWN THE MERRIMACK RIVER FROM ANDOVER STREET, LOWELL  
Showing Pool at Head of Proposed Navigation Channel





PAWTUCKET FALLS  
Water Development of 30,000 Horse-power Daily



record of his ever having revisited his birthplace. In later life he persistently denied that he was born in Lowell, claiming St. Petersburg as his birthplace.

Only at one brief period in its history has Lowell been what journalists call a "literary centre"—a place where a considerable number of writers ply their craft and are associated with each other professionally. The group of young women who contributed to the *Lowell Offering* between 1840 and 1850 began what under favoring circumstances might have grown into a distinctive "Lowell school of literature." Their little magazine found readers throughout the country. It was seriously reviewed in London and Edinburgh. A bound volume of *The Offering* was shown by M. Thiers to the French chamber of deputies as an example of what working women may do for themselves in a republic.

Lowell, for the rest, though many writers, professional and amateur, have lived from time to time within its confines, has never qualified as one of the New England towns which must be mentioned in any and every survey of American literature. It has no such reputation as that of the former shire town a few miles up the Concord river, immortalized by the writings of Emerson, Thoreau, Hawthorne and the Alcotts. The Merrimack does not figure in literature as does the Charles. The printing and publishing industry, except for one large print shop whose specialty is commercial rather than literary, has not sought locations in Lowell; it has been largely centralized, so far as this part of New England is concerned, in Greater Boston. While there have been so-called literary societies in Lowell as in nearly every community, these have not been associations of professional workers, such as compose the membership of the Boston Authors' Club. Except, in fact, in the era covered by *The Offering*, little material is offered for a narrative history of literary production in Lowell; one falls back, perforce, upon a list of individual and often isolated authors, few of them professional in the sense of giving their entire time to such work.

The efflorescence of literature in New England in the middle nineteenth century—the so-called "golden age," which produced most of the now classic authors named in school text-books—naturally had offshoots in a manufacturing village situated only twenty-five miles from the "Hub of the Universe." This mental effervescence of the thirties and forties was of a sort to suffuse much of the writing of the period with personal emotion—in other words to



evoke literature. Lowell, with its population of well-born, alert Yankees, selected individuals from many communities, was in favorable situation to generate a literary fervor of its own.

The mill girls of the newly-incorporated city, as Mrs. Robinson has recalled in her "Loom and Spindle," were omnivorous readers. When they were not allowed to take books and magazines into the factory they brought newspaper clippings of poems and fine sentiments and would paste these on the window to be memorized during lulls in the work. At the boarding house they read the weekly newspapers and discussed the propriety of the Mexican War and of further extensions of slave territory. Many of them were interested in Fourier (1772-1837) and French communism; though the prevailing opinion was that his proposed "phalansteries," or communistic associations of 1,800 persons, would have in an intensified degree the defects of the existing factory system with which they were familiar. The progress and decline of the celebrated Brook Farm community, which ran for about six years beginning in 1843, was watched with much curiosity by Lowell operatives. Mrs. Amelia Bloomer, the New York dress reformer, found several converts among the wide-awake "girls" of the Lowell mills. According to the *Lowell Journal*, on July 4, 1850, local merriment was caused when a little group of bloomerites in costume joined the parade. A considerable following, also, was vouchsafed in Lowell for Professor Sylvester Graham, the first noted advocate in America of vegetarianism. In this era, too, "Prof. Fowler," the phrenologist, examined the crania of many young men and young women and told them unhesitatingly what careers they were adapted for. Mesmerism, that manifestation of the eternal gullible, had its many devotees in the corporation boarding houses.

In this time of lively fads and isms, some fifty young women employed in the factories proved that they could write well enough to draw surprised commendation from the solemn *North American Review*.\*

---

\*Dickens had in mind the attitude of English readers of three-decker novels toward the lower classes of society when he notified his constituency that he had discovered in Lowell "three facts which will startle a large class of readers on this side of the Atlantic very much. Firstly, there is a joint stock piano in a great many of the boarding houses. Secondly, nearly all these young ladies subscribe to circulating libraries. Thirdly, they have got up among themselves a periodical called *The Lowell Offering*, 'a repository of original articles, written exclusively by females actively employed in the mills,'—which is duly printed, published and sold; and whereof I brought away from Lowell four hundred good solid pages, which I have read from beginning to end."





## LITERARY LOWELL

The publication of the celebrated magazine at Lowell was preceded by the formation of several groups of young persons for purposes of literary study. In 1839 Harriot F. Curtis conceived the idea of an "Improvement Circle," for development of literary talent. The proposed group was formed. The original list of officers is forgotten, though it is known that Emmeline Larcom was secretary and that her sister Lucy was of the original members. The meetings must have been enjoyable, for the idea was copied, and by 1843 there were at least five "Improvement Circles" in various parts of the city. Two of these circles had been organized as promising aids to church work by the Rev. Abel C. Thomas and Rev. Thomas B. Thayer, pastors respectively of the First and Second Universalist churches.

To Mr. Thomas belongs the credit of originating *The Lowell Offering*. When the Improvement Circle was started at his church, he found that it was difficult to get the young people to speak on the topics assigned for literary study and he accordingly introduced a plan of having them bring to the meeting written essays that were read aloud by their authors. Some of these papers seemed to him to be so remarkable that he arranged for publication of a selection in series of four pamphlets entitled "The Lowell Offering, a Repository of Original Articles by Females employed in the Mills," and issued between October, 1840, and March, 1841. Such a demand for copies of these pamphlets arose that the circle at the Universalist Church undertook the preparation of copy for a new review of thirty-two pages. This was published monthly until October, 1842, under Mr. Thomas' supervision. It was then taken over by Harriot Curtis and Harriet Farley, who engaged William Schouler to publish it for them. The arrangement lasted a year and then the two young ladies became editors, publishers and proprietors. Assuming this responsibility, they issued the magazine until December, 1845, when, upon the completion of the fifth volume, Miss Curtis retired and the magazine was temporarily suspended. In September, 1847, it was reissued by Miss Farley under the style of *The New England Offering*. Only one number was then produced. In April, 1848, Miss Farley got a fresh start and continued publishing her magazine until March, 1850, when the publication was given up for ever.

Within these ten years of more or less intermittent publication,



the productions of about fifty mill girl writers gained a celebrity that was well deserved, even though it was not based entirely upon literary merit. The contributors, so far as known, were as follows: Sarah S. Bagley, Josephine L. Barker, Lucy Ann Baker, Caroline Bean, Adeline Bradley, Fidelia O. Brown, M. Bryant, Alice Ann Carter, Joanna Carroll, Eliza J. Cate, Betsey Chamberlain, L. A. Choate, Kate Clapp, Louisa Currier, Maria Currier, Lura Currier, Harriot F. Curtis, Catherine Dodge, M. A. Dodge, Harriet Farley, Margaret F. Foley, A. M. Fosdick, Abby A. Goddard, M. R. Green, Lydia S. Hall, Jane B. Hamilton, Harriet Jane Hanson, Eliza Rice Holbrook, Eliza W. Jennings, Hannah Johnson, E. Kidder, Miss Lane, Emmeline Larcum, Lucy Larcum, L. E. Leavitt, Harriet Lees, Mary A. Leonard, Sarah E. Martin, Mary A. Leonard, Sarah E. Martin, Mary J. McAfee, E. D. Perver, E. S. Pope, Mary R. Rainey, Sarah Shedd, Ellen L. Smith, Laura Spaulding, Emmeline Sprague, S. W. Stewart, Laura Tay, Rebecca C. Thompson, Abby D. Turner, H. Whitney, A. E. Wilson, Jane S. Welch, Adeline H. Winship, Sabra Wright. Most of these young women, of course, were afterwards married and lost to fame, so far as literary achievements were concerned. A few of them, however, appear with published books to their credit in the list of publications by Lowell authors.

So unusual a proceeding as the publication of a magazine by women may have caused more or less adverse criticism in conservative homes of the city. When Miss Curtis and Miss Farley undertook the editorship they found it wise to secure a formal statement of approval of their enterprise from several of the leading men of the community. Those who signed this statement were Samuel Lawrence, Benjamin F. French, J. W. Warren, William Butterfield, John Avery, Alexander Wright, John Wright, John Clarke, Homer Bartlett, William Schouler, Jacob Robbins, George Motley, William Spencer. At this time, so far as known, only three other women in the United States were doing editorial work. They were Cornelia Walter, of the *Boston Transcript*; Mrs. Green, who edited the *Fall River Wampanoag*, and Lydia Maria Child, of the *Anti-Slavery Standard*.

If the plan of issuing such a mill girls' magazine was highly original, the same adjective could hardly be applied to the contents of the periodical. As might be expected from young women who were as a rule more interested in the books they had read than in the



life that was lived around and about them, the literature which they produced was mainly derivative and imitative. The poetry savored of Mrs. Sigourney, Mrs. Hemans, Miss Landon, Mrs. Barbauld, Pope, Cowper and Hannah More. The prose was modeled after Addison, Goldsmith and Lydia Child. In technical quality, nevertheless, *The Offering* averages up to the standard of the religious and literary journals of the period. Several of the contributors used the experience they gained from their own magazine to break into others, and while still writing for *The Offering* were seeing their poems and stories printed in *Zion's Herald*, *The Christian Register*, the *Saturday Evening Gazette* and other publications.

That there was a good local reading public for such a magazine as *The Offering* is evident from one of the news articles in the magazine, descriptive of the daily life of the factory operatives. In an account of "Our Household," signed "H. T.," the following significant data are given:

In our house there are eleven boarders, and in all thirteen members of the family. I will class them according to their religious tenets as follows: Calvinist Baptist, Unitarian, Congregational, Catholic, Episcopalian, and Mormonite, one each; Universalist and Methodist, two each; Christian Baptist, three. They receive regularly fifteen newspapers and periodicals; these are, the *Boston Daily Times*, the *Herald of Freedom*, the *Signs of the Times*, and the *Christian Herald*, two copies each; the *Christian Register*, *Vox Populi*, *Literary Souvenir*, *Boston Pilot*, "Young Catholic's Friend," *Star of Bethlehem* and the *Lowell Offering*, three copies each. We also borrow regularly the *Non-Resident*, the *Liberator*, the *Lady's Book*, the *Ladies' Pearl* and the *Ladies' Companion*. We have also in the house what cannot perhaps be found elsewhere in the city of Lowell, a Mormon Bible.

In a town where average working women thus read avidly of the periodical literature of the day, it was not strange that some one felt the incentive to undertake a local magazine publication. The wonder, indeed, is that there were not several magazines. The *Lowell Offering* died from the financial trouble that has overtaken most of the countless periodical ventures of the past century and a half. Nothing runs into money faster than an unsuccessful magazine, and most of those that keep going never quite square up with their printers' bills.

The editors and contributors of *The Offering* were scattered



after 1850, and Lowell never again had a group or school of literary workers in any way comparable with the coteries that have made Boston, Cambridge, Concord, Springfield, Hartford and Indianapolis celebrated. Some details of the life history of those members of the school who later did professional work are given in the list of Lowell authors on following pages. It may also be noted that Miss Foley became rather a well-known sculptor of the same era and genre as the late Harriet Hosmer. A majority of the contributors were, of course, only amateurs to whom writing was an agreeable diversion.

The subjoined list of authors sometime resident of Lowell, and of their principal publications, is based, with some additions supplied from the card catalogues of the Boston and Harvard College libraries and from the national and New England editions of "Who's Who," on the admirable compilation prepared for the Lowell Board of Trade's 1916 booklet by Frederick A. Chase, librarian of the city of Lowell. Brief biographical data concerning several of the authors have been supplied:

Abbott, Katharine M.—"Old Paths and Legends of the New England Border" (1907). "Old Paths and Legends of New England" (1903). "Trolley Trips on a Bay State Triangle for Sixty Sunny Days" (1897). A daughter of Hon. James M. Abbott, who was among the first in New England to discover the delightfulness of trolley tripping.

Ames, Blanche Butler—"The Butler Family."

Ayer, Frederick Fanning—"Bell and Wing" (1911). "Josephine Mellen Ayer, a Memoir" (1900). Mr. Ayer's many benefactions to the city of Lowell, in which he was born, September 12, 1851, have been described elsewhere in this history. He was admitted to the Massachusetts bar in 1875, and since the death of his father, Dr. James Cook Ayer, he has given most of his time to management of the extensive Ayer interests. His home for some years past has been at 5 West 57th street, New York City.

Ball, Benjamin R.—"Government of the State of Massachusetts" (1885).

Ball, Benjamin West—"The Merrimack River, Hellenies and Other Poems." Edited with an introduction by Frederick Fanning Ayer. (1892). "Elfin Land" (1851). Mr. Ball was born at Concord, Mass., Jan. 27, 1823. He was prepared at Lawrence Academy for Dartmouth College, from which he was graduated in 1842. He read law with John P. Robinson, at Lowell. In 1856 he became editor of the *Courier*. In person and postures he was very much





of the picturesque Bohemian during his Lowell residence. He is remembered by Judge Hadley, who, on one occasion, had to use his good offices to keep Ball out of the lock-up when he had been found in an inebriated condition in a Lowell coal cellar. He was well liked as a man, and had not a little of the divine afflatus. His wife was a Rochester, New Hampshire, woman, and at her ancestral home he spent the latter part of his life among his books and manuscripts.

Barnes, Emily R.—"Narratives, etc., of the Bellows Family" (1888).

Bartlett, Elisha—"A Vindication of the Character and Condition of the Females Employed in the Lowell Mills" (1841). "An Essay on the Philosophy of Medical Science" (1844).

Bass, Cora C. (Hester Vane)—"Songs for All Seasons and Other Poems" (1901). Poems (1899).

Batchelor, Rev. George—"Social Equilibrium and Other Problems, Ethical and Religious" (1887). This distinguished Unitarian clergyman, editor and author was born at Southbury, Conn., in 1836. He received degrees from the Meadville Theological Seminary, Harvard College and the Harvard Divinity School. From his ordination in 1866 until 1882 he preached in Salem. After a three years pastorate at Chicago he came to the First Unitarian Church, Lowell, serving until 1893, when he was elected secretary of the American Unitarian Association. In 1897 he became editor of the *Christian Register*, a position held until 1911, when he was made editor emeritus. Mr. Batchelor has been one of the most vigorous writers in the field of religious journalism, representing the conservative element in the Unitarian denomination.

Burnap, Rev. Uzziah Cicero—"Lectures on the Seventh Commandment, Delivered in the City of Lowell, December, 1837" (1838). "The Youth's Etherial Director" (1822).

Butler, General Benjamin Franklin—"Butler's Book" (1892).

Caverly, Robert Boodey—"King Philip," "Miantonomi," and "Chocorua in the Mountains," historical dramas (1884). "Genealogy of the Caverly Family" (1880). "Annals of the Boodeys in New England" (1880). "Heroism of Hannah Duston" (1875). "Poems" (1871-72). "History of Barnstead, N. H.," begun by Jeremiah R. Jewett and finished by Mr. Caverly (1872). "An Epic Poem, The Merrimac and Its Incidents" (1866). Mr. Caverly, for many years a sort of "poet laureate" of Lowell, was born at Barrington, N. H., July 19, 1806. As a very young man he earned the title of colonel in the New Hampshire militia. He attended the Harvard Law School, and practiced for six years in Maine, after which he settled in Lowell. The record of his busy life as a lawyer is recorded in published reports of the Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Maine courts and of the Supreme Court of the United States. His literary labors, some of which he published at his own



expense, were produced in the evening at his residence in Centralville. He was a painstaking worker in the field of historical research, a fluent but not inspired versifier.

Chambré, Rev. A. St. John—"Sermons on the Apostles' Creed" (1898). Rev. Dr. Chambré, who became rector of St. Anne's Church in 1884, had a delicate and graceful literary style as shown in this volume of sermons and in his many addresses and special reports.

Chase, C. C.—"Lowell," in "History of Middlesex County" (1890). Mr. Chase was born at Haverhill, June 19, 1818, in a house situated not far from the birthplace of the poet Whittier, who was one of his lifelong friends. Entering Dartmouth College, he was graduated with highest honors in 1839. In 1845 he came to Lowell as principal of the high school, and here the remainder of his long and useful life was passed.

Coburn, Silas R.—"Genealogy of the Descendants of Edward Colburn (Coburn)," co-author with George A. Gordon (1913). "Across the Ferry" (1886). Mr. Coburn was born in 1848, a son of Captain Gilbert Coburn, of Pelham. As an avocation he has devoted much time to historical and genealogical work.

Coburn, Frederick William—"The American Business Encyclopædia" (1912). Mr. Coburn was born at Nashua, N. H., Aug. 6, 1870, a son of Frank and Susan (Whitney) Coburn, both for many years resident at Lowell. He was graduated from the Lowell High School with a Carney medal in 1888; from Harvard College in 1891. While teaching at Washington and New York, 1891-1901, he studied at the Art Students' Leagues of both cities, having as principal instructors at Washington, Harold McDonald and E. C. Messer; at New York, Douglas Volk, George DeForest Brush and Kenyon Cox. Since 1902 he has done general literary work, and occasional illustrating at Boston. He has contributed to many American and English magazines.\*

Coburn, Mrs. Fordyce (Eleanor Hallowell Abbott)—"The Indiscreet Letter" (1915). "Little Eve Edgarton" (1914). "The White Linen Nurse" (1913). "Molly Makebelieve" (1911). "The Sick-a-Bed Lady" (1911). Mrs. Coburn, a granddaughter of Jacob Abbott, whose "Rollo" books interested young people of the middle nineteenth century, and a daughter of Rev. Edward Abbott, author as well as clergyman, has inherited a literary talent which finds expression in subtle and exquisitely constructed fiction. Since her marriage to Dr. Fordyce Coburn she has lived in Lowell winters, and summers at Wilton, where many of her best stories have been written.

Colburn, Warren—"Intellectual Arithmetic" (1863). The above is only one of the almost numberless editions through which "Col-

---

\*Mr. Coburn's last piece of work is his excellent "History of Lowell," from which these pages are taken. His narrative is delightfully original, in his masterly command of language, in almost conversational style.



burn's Arithmetic" went—a book with an international vogue during several decades. Its author, born in 1793, was, as brought out in volume one, one of the founders of the town of Lowell. He died in 1831. To him and to his co-worker, Dr. Edson, was due the modern and effective public school system which the town of Lowell adopted.

Colby, John Stark—"Agatha: a Romance of Maine" (1880). The alert and aggressive editor of the *For Populi*, who about 1890 left Lowell to study for the ministry, wielded a trenchant pen which, but for the exacting duties of journalism, might have made copy for more books than the single one credited to him.

Coughlin, William J.—"Songs of an Idle Hour" (1883). The author was a scholarly bookseller, whose shop is well remembered by older Lowell people.

Cowley, Charles—"Leaves from a Lawyer's Life, Afloat and Ashore" (1879). "Famous Divorces of All Ages" (1878). "Illustrated History of Lowell" (1868). "Memoirs of the Indians and Pioneers of the Region of Lowell" (1862). Judge Cowley as historian, lawyer and patriot, may fairly be called the Herodotos of Lowell.

Crosby, Nathan—"Eulogy on Tappan Wentworth" (1877). "A Crosby Family" (1877). "First Half Century of Dartmouth College" (1876). Judge Crosby's loyalty to Dartmouth, from which he was graduated in 1820, led to his undertaking the important historical study listed above.

Curtis, Harriot F.—"Jessie's Flirtations" (1846). "Kate in Search of a Husband." Miss Curtis was associated with Harriet Farley as editor and publisher of *The Lowell Offering*. She appears to have been the moving spirit (in these days she would have been called the general manager) of the celebrated enterprise. She was born at Kellyvale (now Lowell), Vermont, Sept. 16, 1813. She came to Lowell with the idea of earning money for an education. As an operative she was a skilled harness dresser on the Lawrence Corporation. The *cacoethes scribendi* was strong in her. Her "Kate in Search of a Husband" was one of the earliest of a somewhat sentimental type of novel which later became very familiar. As editor of the little magazine she became acquainted with many of the foremost literary people of the time. She remained in Lowell for a few years after the discontinuance of *The Offering*, and for a time she wrote rather extensively for magazines and newspapers. Then she returned to Vermont to care for an aged and blind mother and gradually lost the zest of production. Other family cares of the same sort developed and the rest of her life was passed in keeping house for invalid relatives. She died at Needham in 1889.

Devereaux, Anna W.—"The Lowell System of Kindergarten Designing." This is a work by the former principal of the Lowell Training School for Teachers.



Eddy, Daniel C.—“The Percy Family” (1859). “The Young Man’s Friend” (1854). “Europa” (1852). “Letters to Young Ladies” (1848). This Baptist clergyman, who was settled in Lowell between 1848 and 1856, returned to the city to read a most interesting historical retrospect at the fiftieth anniversary exercises of the First Baptist Church.

Eastman, Mary P.—“Biography of Dr. Lewis” (1901).

Eaton, Joseph Giles—“The Chesapeake and the Shannon” (1901). “Notes on Steel Inspection of Structural and Boiler Material” (1873). Admiral Eaton, born at Greenville, Ala., 1847, son of William Pitt and Sarah Farwell (Brazier) Eaton, was educated at the Lockport, N. Y., Union Academy, Worcester Military Academy, and at the United States Naval Academy, Annapolis. In 1871 he married Mary Anne Varnum, of Draut. He rose by successive steps in the navy and received medals for conduct in the battles of Manzanillo and Santiago, war of 1898. The circumstances of his death a few years ago caused much newspaper publicity to be given to his personal affairs.

Edson, Elizabeth M.—“Plain Questions on the Collects, Epistles and Gospels of the Christian Year.”

Edson, Rev. Dr. Theodore—“Sermons” (1891). “Memoir of Warren Colburn” (1856). “Christian Nurture and Admonition” (1847). Dr. Edson (1793-1883) was so prominent a figure in the early and middle periods of Lowell history that special characterization of his services is not needed here.

Egan, Patrick—“A Circle of Memories” (1888). An attorney, with a delicate poetic gift, whose untimely decease was regretted by a wide circle of friends and acquaintances.

Emery, Enoch—“Myself—a Romance of New England Life” (1872). The author was a brother of Major Henry Emery, the well-known Lowell hotel man. He was born at Canterbury, N. H., Aug. 31, 1822. As a young man he served as clerk in his brother’s hotel and in 1851 as a member of the firm of Keach, Emery & Co., he founded the *Lowell Daily News*. A short time afterwards he started the *Daily Morning Herald*, which was shortlived. In 1854 he went to Peoria, Ill., where he was for many years editor of the *Transcript*, still a leading paper of that community. He died at Peoria, May 30, 1881.

Farley, Harriet—“Fancy’s Frolics” (1880). “Shells from the Strand of the Sea of Genius” (1847). “Operatives’ Reply to Hon. Jere Clemens” (1856). Miss Farley was one of the editors and publishers of the *Lowell Offering*. She was born at Amesbury, a daughter of Rev. Stephen Farley, a Unitarian clergyman. She came to Lowell to earn money to help a brother through Harvard. She later married Mr. Dunlevy, an inventor, and lived in New York.

Francis, James Bicheno—“Prevention of Floods in the Valley





## LITERARY LOWELL

of Stony Brook" (1886). "Lowell Hydraulic Experiments" (1883). "On the Strength of Cast Iron Pillars" (1883). The distinguished engineer whose studies brought international celebrity to the Lowell hydraulic system confined his writing to technical subjects. His "Lowell Hydraulic Experiments" is still a classic of hydraulic engineering.

Garity, Mrs. George E. (Elizabeth Walker)—"Real Letters of a Real Girl" (1909). She graduated from the Lowell High School. While her husband, Captain George E. Garity, was stationed in the Philippines, she wrote home to her friend Miss Elizabeth Butler Hadley the letters which were subsequently published in book form.

Greene, Rev. Dr. John Morton—"Genealogy of the Family of Timothy and Eunice Greene" (1904). "Looking on the Bright Side" (1901). "Happy Wedlock" (1900). "The Blessed Dead" (1888). Dr. Greene, often called "the father of Smith College," occupied the pulpit of the Eliot Congregational Church from 1870 to 1900, when he was made pastor emeritus.

Griffin, Sara Swan—"Quaint Bits of Lowell History" (1913). Mrs. Griffin was for some years a Lowell teacher. After her marriage she gave much time and attention to historical research, for which she has marked aptitude. She has lectured extensively upon historical subjects. Her book on old Lowell has especially valuable chapters on the Acadians at Chelmsford, on Colonel Lewis Ansart, Marquis de Marasquelles, and on old houses of the neighborhood.

Hadley, Samuel Page—"Genealogy of the Hadley Family." Judge Hadley made many contributions to the literature of the Lowell Historical Society.

Haggett, Mrs. Frank—"Snow Hill Girls."

Hanks, Rev. S. W.—"Black Valley Railroad and the Country." Pastor of John Street Congregational Church for twelve years, his ministry terminating in 1852. For many years after leaving Lowell, he was secretary of the Seaman's Friend Society in Boston.

Hanscom, Elizabeth Deering—"The Friendly Craft, A Collection of American Letters" (1908). "Lamb's Essays; a Biographical Study" (1905). "The Argument of the Vision of Piers Ploughman." Miss Hanscom, daughter of George A. and Lizzie (Deering) Hanscom, was born at Saco, Maine, and educated in the public schools of Manchester and Lowell. She was graduated in 1887 from Boston University, and then for three years did newspaper work in Boston. In 1890 she entered the graduate school of Yale University, from which she received her A. M. in 1892, and Ph. D. in 1894. Since 1894 she has taught continuously at Smith College, where she was made full professor in 1905.

Harrington, Thomas F., M. D.—"The Harvard Medical School" (1905). Dr. Harrington, one of the foremost medical men of Massachusetts, was born at Lowell in 1866. He was graduated from the Lowell High School in 1885, having been major of the battalion in



## LITERARY LOWELL.

his senior year. He was graduated from the Harvard Medical School in 1888, and he later studied at Dublin and in Vienna. He practiced medicine in Lowell from 1889 to 1907, when he was elected medical director of the Boston public schools. Later he became secretary of the State Board of Health. Dr. Harrington was originator of the "Health Day" plan which has met wide approval throughout the United States. He has been a delegate at various medical congresses in this country and abroad. While a resident of Lowell he originated the plan, now generally followed everywhere, of flushing the streets in the tenement districts on very warm days. His history of the medical school of which he is an alumnus has been highly commended, and his various special reports and addresses are models of clear, concise writing.

Haywood, William Mills—"History of Hancock, N. H." (1889). The author was a Universalist minister, born at Hancock in 1834 and graduated from the Tufts Divinity School in 1877.

Hedrick, Charles C.—"Cotton Spinning" (1909).

Hedrick, Mary A.—"Incidents of the Civil War" (1888).

Hill, Mabel—"Civics for New Americans" (1915). "A Course in Citizenship" (1914). "Lessons for Junior Citizens" (1906). "Liberty Documents" (1901). Miss Hill, a daughter of Paul and Belinda (Hadley) Hill, was educated at Bradford Academy and Radcliffe College. Between 1897 and 1912 she was instructor in history at the State Normal School, Lowell. In the latter year she became dean of the graduate department of Dana Hall School, Wellesley, and later associate director of the Garland School of Home Making, Boston.

Hodgman, Arthur Winfred—"The Versification of Latin Metrical Inscriptions" (1897). Prof. Hodgman was graduated from the Lowell High School in 1886, and from Harvard College, with honors in the classics, in 1890. His life has been devoted to university teaching and intensive scholarship.

Hodgman, Edwin R.—"History of the Town of Westford" (1883).

Huntington, William Reed—"Sonnets and a Dream" (1899). "Four Key Words of Religion" (1890). "Psyche, a Study of the Soul" (1899). "A National Church" (1898). "The Spiritual House" (1895). "Short History of the Book of Common Prayer" (1893). "The Peace of the Church" (1891). "The Causes of the Soul" (1891). "Popular Misconceptions of the Episcopal Church" (1891). "Conditional Mortality" (1878). "The Church Idea" (1870). Dr. Huntington, for many years rector of Grace Church, New York City, was a son of Dr. Elisha Huntington, after whom Huntington Hall was named. He was born in Lowell, September 20, 1838, and was graduated from Harvard College in 1859. He became a deacon of the Protestant Episcopal Church in 1861; a priest in 1862. From 1862 to 1883 he was rector of All Saints' Church, Wor-



cester. In the latter year he was called to be rector of Grace Church in the metropolis. He married Theresa, daughter of Dr. Edward Reynolds, of Boston, a niece of Wendell Phillips.

Irish, Cyrus W.—“Qualitative Analysis for Secondary Schools” (1894). The exacting supervisory duties of the late principal of the Lowell High School prevented him from undertaking scientific studies which he would have liked to make. Mr. Irish was born at Buckfield, Me., Aug. 27, 1862. Coming to Lowell through his older brother, Dr. John C. Irish, he was graduated from the high school in 1881 and from Harvard College in 1885. He was elected first principal of the Pawtucket Grammar School in 1885. Two years later he entered the high school as teacher of chemistry, and remained in its service as instructor and principal down to his death in the summer of 1917.

Johnson, Allen—“Readings in American Constitutional History” (1912). “Union and Democracy” (1912). “Report on the Archives of the State of Maine” (1910). “Stephen A. Douglas” (1908). “The Intendent under Louis XIV” (1899). Prof. Johnson, now of the Department of History, Yale University, was born in Lowell, Jan. 29, 1870, a son of Moses Allen and Emma (Shattuck) Johnson. He was graduated from the Lowell High School in 1888, and from Amherst College in 1892. He received his A. M. degree from Amherst in 1895. The years 1895-97 were spent at the University of Leipzig, Germany; in 1897-98 he was at l’Ecole des Sciences Politiques, Paris. In 1899 he received his degree of Ph. D. from Columbia University. He was professor of history at Grinnell College, Iowa, 1898-1905, and at Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, 1905-10. In the latter year he was called to Yale. Mr. Johnson is one of the ablest and most progressive of university students of American history.

Kenngott, George F.—“The Record of a City; a Social Survey of Lowell, Massachusetts” (1912). The author of a much discussed intensive study of Lowell was born at Pittsburgh, Penn., Feb. 8, 1862, of German and Scottish ancestry. He was graduated with honors from the Pittsburgh Central High School in 1882, and from Amherst College in 1886. He attended the Andover Theological School for three years. In October, 1889, he became pastor of a church at Newport, N. H. In September, 1892, he was installed at the First Congregational Church, Lowell. The troubles of his pastorate, which resulted in the formation of a separate church with Mr. Kenngott as minister, need only be referred to. The “Survey,” which was published by the Macmillan Company, was undertaken to satisfy the requirements of a Harvard Ph. D. degree, which Mr. Kenngott won in the social ethics department. He moved in 1916 to Los Angeles, California.

King, Charles Francis—“Advanced Geography” (1913). “Elementary Geography” (1909). “Roundabout Rambles in Northern



Europe" (1908). "Methods and Aids in Geography" (1889). Mr. King was born at Wilton, N. H., and was graduated from Dartmouth College in 1867. He married Elizabeth Boardman, of Lowell. From 1887 to 1913 he was principal of the Dearborn School, Boston, in which latter year he was retired.

Lareom, Lucy—"Poetical Works." "Landscape in American Poetry;" "An Idyl of Work;" "At the Beautiful Gate;" "A New England Girlhood;" "Childhood Songs;" "The Unseen Friend;" "As it is in Heaven;" "Wild Roses of Cape Ann." Miss Lareom, it hardly need be said, was the most famous of the group of writers who began their work by contributing to the *Lowell Offering*.

Le Moine, Sir James McPherson—"Maple Leaves" (1894). "The Explorations of Jonathan Oldbuck in Eastern Labrador" (1887). "Tourists' Notebook; Quebec" (1890). The author was a member of the Royal Society of Canada from its foundation, and to its publications he made many scientific contributions which are summed up in "La Bibliographie de Sir James M. LeMorne." Par Raoul Renault. Quebec: Leger Brousseau. 1897.

Little, William—"History of Weare, N. H."

Livermore, Abiel Abbott and Sewall Putnam—"History of Wilton, N. H."

Lilley, Charles Sumner—"What is the Monroe Doctrine" (1905). Judge Lilley was born at Lowell in 1851, and admitted to the bar in 1877.

Locke, Mrs. Jane Ermina—"Miscellaneous Poems" (1842).

MacBrayne, Lewis E.—"The Men We Marry" (1910). Co-author with James P. Ramsay, "One More Chance" (1916). Mr. MacBrayne was born at New Britain, Conn., in 1871. He was graduated from the Lowell High School in 1890, and studied for a time in Europe. He was a news writer and editor on the staffs of the *Lowell Citizen*, *Courier* and *Courier-Citizen* for more than a quarter century, resigning in 1918 to become director of war gardens for New York State. In addition to the two books mentioned he has contributed articles to most of the leading American magazines and has written a play, "An Engaging Position."

Marden, Philip Sanford—"Egyptian Days" (1912). "Travels in Spain" (1909). "Greece and the Aegean Islands" (1907). The author of these travel books was born in Lowell in 1874, educated at the Lowell High School, and Dartmouth College, from which he was graduated in 1894, and the Harvard Law School, from which he received his LL. B. degree in 1898. He became managing editor of the *Courier-Citizen* in 1902, and after the death of his father, the Hon. George A. Marden, was chosen president of the *Courier-Citizen* Company in 1907. The first of his published books appeared in the form of letters from Greece in the "C-C," and attracted so much favorable comment that Mr. Marden was induced to embody the ser-





ies in book-form. The success of the book was immediate and led to a demand for more volumes of the same sort.

Miles, Henry Adolphus—"Traces of Picture Writing in the Bible" (1870). "William Ellery Channing: a Selection from his Works" (1855). "The Gospel Narratives" (1848). "Lowell as It was and as It is" (1845). This celebrated Unitarian divine was pastor of the South Congregational Society (Unitarian) from 1836 to 1853, when he resigned to become secretary of the American Unitarian Association.

Miner, Alonzo Ames—"Bible Exercises" (1884). This Boston clergyman was settled at the Second Universalist Church, Lowell, 1842-48. He was born in 1814, and died in 1895.

Morrison, William A.—"Practical Engineer and Mechanics' Guide" (1884).

Morey, Charles W.—"Morey Arithmetics." The well loved late principal of the Highland Grammar School, whose portrait painted by Mrs. Wood now hangs at the school.

Nesmith, Joseph Aaron—"The Lazy Clouds" (1916).

Nesmith, James Ernest—"Philoctetes and Other Poems and Sonnets" (1894). "Frederic Thomas Greenhalge" (1897). "Monadnock and Other Sketches in Verse" (1888).

Both the foregoing sons of John Nesmith have shown literary as well as artistic ability. The untimely death of James Ernest Nesmith cut off a career of much promise. Joseph E. Nesmith is better known as a painter and as president of the Lowell Art Association than as writer. Both brothers were graduated from Harvard College.

O'Connell, William, Cardinal—"Sermons and Addresses," four volumes (1911-15). The pride which Lowell people take in Cardinal O'Connell has been attested in the naming of the Cardinal O'Connell Parkway, and in many other ways. His published sermons bear witness to his command of vigorous, eloquent English, which was notable even in his boyhood in Lowell public schools.

O'Croly, Ita (Margaret) Hutchinson—"Eastern Echoes with Western Ideas" (1892).

Osgood, William Nelson—"Law Points for Business Men" (1908). This well-known attorney and publicist was born at Lowell in 1855, graduated from Amherst College in 1878, and admitted to the bar in 1880. Since 1885 he has had a law office in Boston, though retaining his residence in Lowell.

Parker, Maria Hildreth—"The Country Home" (1894). "Halworth Hill," a novel. "Stories for Children," a Christmas Book. "Stray Thoughts or Poems" (1885). "Poems and Stories" (1876).

Parker, Moses Greeley, M. D.—"Photo-Micrography" (1888). Dr. Parker, in addition to his scientific achievements, which have elsewhere been described, wrote extensively on subjects in which he was interested.



## LITERARY LOWELL

Reade, Brig. Gen. Philip—"Dedicatory Exercises at the Massachusetts Military Monument, Valley Forge, Pa." (1912). "History of the Military Canteen" (1912). "Origin and Genealogy of the Hildreth Family, Lowell" (1892). Gen. Reade was born at Lowell, Oct. 13, 1844. He studied at the United States Military Academy, West Point, 1864-67. In 1901, after a career of marked competence, he was honorably discharged from volunteer service. He was relieved by operation of the law in October, 1908. He had then had forty-four years in the military service, including Indian wars, the Civil War, the Spanish-American War in Cuba, the Aguinaldo Insurrection. His writings reflect a lifelong interest in military, patriotic and genealogical matters.

Reed, Fanny—"Reminiscences" (1903). She lived for many years in Paris, though the Lowell residence was kept open. Her "Reminiscences" were of some of the foremost nineteenth century figures.

Rice, Laura A.—"Sunshine and Shade" (1879).

Rice, Lepine Hall—"Digest of the Decisions of Law and Practice in the Patent Office from 1869 to 1900" (1900).

Richardson, William Adams—"Rules of the Court of Claims and of the Supreme Court Relating to Appeals" (1895). "History, Jurisdiction and Practice of the United States Court of Claims" (1882). "Practical Information concerning the Public Debt of the United States" (1872). "The Banking Laws of Massachusetts" (1855).

Robinson, Harriet Hanson—"Loom and Spindle" (1898). "Early Factory Labor in New England" (1883). Harriet Hanson Robinson, one of the most famous contributors to *The Lowell Offering*, was born in Boston, Feb. 8, 1825. Her widowed mother came to Lowell in 1832 and took a boarding-house on the Tremont and Suffolk Corporation. Harriet was educated at the old North Grammar School, and had some months at the high school. At fifteen she became self-supporting by going into the mill. Through her mother's Universalist connections, she was one of the early contributors to *The Offering*. She also wrote sketches for the newspapers. One of these, submitted to William S. Robinson, then a Lowell editor, led to an acquaintance and subsequent marriage. In later life Mrs. Robinson was one of the pioneers of the woman suffrage movement. She was one of the founders of the General Federation of Women's Clubs in 1890. Her home for many years was at Malden.

Russell, James H.—"Rational Arithmetic" (1843). Mr. Russell, who died at his home in Nesmith street, Jan. 14, 1903, at the advanced age of ninety-six, was for forty-four years a teacher in the Lowell High School. He came to the then town of Lowell in 1835 as an instructor in mathematics.

Shaw, Ralph H.—"The First Plymouth Marriage" (1907). "Leg-



end of the *Trailing Arbutus and Other Poems*" (1898). "In Many Moods" (1889). This son of Benjamin Franklin Shaw, inventor of the seamless hose, has from boyhood been a resident of Lowell and a contributor of graceful verse to many publications.

Stowell, Charles Henry, M. D.—"Student's Manual of Histology." "Microscopical Diagnosis." "The Structure of Teeth." "A Healthy Body." "A Primer of Health." "How to Teach Physiology." Dr. Stowell, one of the most celebrated of the considerable number of scientific men who have lived in Lowell, is at this writing (1917) general manager and treasurer of the J. C. Ayer Company. He was born at Perry, N. Y., Oct. 27, 1850. His early training was at the Genesee Wesleyan Seminary and the University of Michigan, from which he received his M. D. degree in 1872. He was in the service of his *alma mater* as instructor, assistant professor and professor between 1877 and 1889. Dr. Stowell is editor of five monthly journals: *Trained Motherhood*, *Food*, *Practical Review*, *The Microscope* and *The National Medical Review*.

Street, Owen, D. D.—"The Dream and the Awakening" (1887). Dr. Street was the beloved pastor of High Street Congregational Church from 1857 until his death in 1887.

Talbot, Anne Richardson—"The Garden of Life and Other Poems" (1913).

Thayer, Wildie—"Flower Fancies from Fairy Land" (1911). "Carbon" (1903). "Violilla" (1898). "Morning Glory" (1897). "First Poems" (1895).

Thorndike, Ashley Horace—"Everyday English" (1913). "Elements of Rhetoric and Composition" (1909). "Tragedy" (1908). "Influence of Beaumont and Fletcher on Shakespeare" (1901).

Thorndike, Edward Lee—"Animal Intelligence" (1901). "Principles of Teaching" (1905). "Elements of Psychology" (1905). "Mental and Social Measurements" (1904).

The brothers Thorndike, both professors at Columbia University, New York City, were born in, respectively, 1871 and 1874. Their father, the Rev. Edward R. Thorndike, a Methodist clergyman, was settled in Lowell, 1884-1887, after which he was called to Roxbury. Both sons started their college preparatory work at the Lowell High School. Professor Ashley Thorndike was graduated from Wesleyan University in 1893, and was awarded his Ph.D. at Harvard in 1898. He is one of the leading Shakespearian scholars of the world. Prof. Edward L. Thorndike was graduated from Wesleyan in 1895 and took his Ph.D. from Columbia in 1898. His studies in animal psychology are internationally famous.

Umpleby, Fenwick—"Design Texts" (1910).

Varnum, Atkinson C.—"History of Pawtucket Church and Society" (1888). Published pamphlets and papers entitled: "Shays' Rebellion," "Burgoyne's Surrender," "The Old Garrison House," "Life of General James M. Varnum," "Life of Colonel Louis An-



sart," "The Coburn Family," "Young Men's Lyceum," "Temperance in Massachusetts," "Ordinations, Huskings and Raisings," "Old Middlesex Canal," "Navigation on the Merrimack."

Walker, Benjamin—"Aboard and Abroad" (1889). Benjamin Walker was born at Wilmington, June 24, 1822. His school training was at the Pinkerton Academy, Derry, N. H., and the Lowell High School. He had intended to study law, but the death of his father caused his going into business. He entered the book publishing company at Philadelphia. His skill in penmanship led to his being chosen teacher of handwriting in Lowell schools in 1847. Three years later he became paymaster of the Hamilton Company. In 1862 he entered the employ of the J. C. Ayer Company as correspondence clerk, a position which he held until his death in November, 1896. He was a director in several important commercial enterprises, a member of the original executive committee of the Old Residents' Historical Association in 1868, one of the originators of the Lowell Choral Society, and its president for ten years; a competent musician, and organist of St. Anne's Church for twenty-six years. Besides his one book he published several musical compositions.

Webster, Prentiss—"Law of Naturalization in the U. S. of America and of Other Countries" (1895). "Acquisition of Citizenship and Application of the Rule to the Case of Chin King" (1889). Editor of "The Story of the City Hall Commission" (1894). Biographical details concerning Mr. Webster have been given in the narrative of the installation of the Lowell City Hall and Memorial Building, of whose commission he was secretary.

Ward, Anna Maria Webster—"Verses" (1906). "Sketch of the Tweed Family of Wilmington, Mass." (1898).

Whitaker, Channing—"Machine Drawing and Allied Subjects. A Lowell Course of 12 Lectures." Boston. 1883.

Wright, Carolyn (Quincy Germaine)—"The Even Hand" (1912). Prof. Whitaker, whose title was due to his holding for some years a professorship at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, settled in Lowell as a mill engineer. His professional practice was extensive. He had an important part in the establishment of free evening drawing classes at which hundreds of young men and women have learned the elements of drafting. Living in the latter years of his life at Tyngsboro, he was very active in efforts to enforce temperance laws.

Whistler, James Abbott McNeil—"The Gentle Art of Making Enemies."





Robt. N. Hill



## Hill and Allied Families

*Arms*—Sable a fesse argent between three leopards passant or, spotted sable. The fesse is charged with three escallops gules.

*Supporters*—Dexter a leopard gules, spotted or, ducally collared or, sinister, a stag, azure, attired gules.

*Crest*—A stag's head and neck, azure; attired gules, on a wreath, over a ducal coronet.

*Motto*—*Per Deum et ferrum obtinui.*



THE family of Hill have been well known and prominent in England since the middle of the fourteenth century, and especially eminent for their antiquity and worth, in the counties of Stafford, Devon, Somerset and Salop. Since the time of Queen Elizabeth it has been of great note and esteem in the counties of Down and Antrim, Ireland. The family has produced in every generation soldiers, statesmen and diplomats of note, and has had its chief seats in the County of Down, Ireland; and in England, at North Alton, in Oxfordshire and Twickenham, in the County of Middlesex.

The American branch of the family ranks among the foremost of our great Republic, holding a place of prominence in the only aristocracy which America knows—that of sterling worth and achievement. The Hill family of Connecticut, of which the late Junius F. Hill, of Waterbury, Connecticut, was a member, traces its history through a period of two hundred and eighty years, through a line of stern and rugged patriots, who in time of need have served their country well, men who have gained notable successes in the professions, men of keen business intellect, and virtuous and capable women.

I. *William Hill*, progenitor of the family in America, emigrated from England, and arrived in Boston Harbor, Massachusetts, on the ship "William and Francis," on June 5, 1632. He was a man of note and settled with a company at Dorchester, Massachusetts. He was made a freeman of the Massachusetts Colony, November 5, 1633, and elected a selectman of Dorchester in 1636. He received an allotment of land from the town Nov. 2, 1635. In 1636, or shortly afterward, he removed to Windsor, on the Connecticut river, where he was granted a home lot and set out an orchard. In 1639 he was appointed by the General Court to examine the arms and ammunition of the colony. He was auditor of public accounts, and was elected to the General Court, 1639-41 and again in 1644. After 1644 he removed to Fairfield, Connecticut, where he lived and died, and



where his last will and testament is recorded in an ancient volume of the records of the "Particular Court for Fairfield County." (To be found in the Fairfield Library.) In Fairfield he became one of the leaders of the official life of the town, serving as assistant, and later being appointed collector of customs. He was selectman in 1656. He and his son William were granted by the town home lots between Paul's Neck and Robert Turney's lot, on the north side of Dorchester street and Newton square. William Hill died in 1649, as his wife was called a widow at that time in the town records. His will is dated Sept. 9, 1649, and was admitted to probate, May 15, 1650. He bequeathed to his wife Sarah, and children: Sarah; William, mentioned below; Joseph; Ignatius; James; Elizabeth.

*II. William (2) Hill*, son of William (1) and Sarah Hill, was born in England, and accompanied his parents to America. It is probable that he was with his father in Dorchester and Windsor, for he accompanied him to Fairfield, where he was the receiver of an allotment of land from the town. He later became one of the most prominent citizens of the town. He was town recorder in 1650, and continued in that office for several years. To him Roger Ludlow delivered town papers of value when he left Fairfield, in 1654. The town records show that on February 1, 1673, he received a portion of his father's estate from his father-in-law, Mr. Greenleaf, which would seem to indicate that his father married a second time. (The term father-in-law was an equivalent of stepfather today). William Hill received from the town, Feb. 13, 1670, the Lewis lot on the northeast corner of Newton square. He died Dec. 19, 1684. He married, at Fairfield, Connecticut, Elizabeth Jones, daughter of the Rev. John Jones. Their children were: William, Eliphalet, Joseph, John, mentioned below; James, Sarah.

*III. John Hill*, son of William (2) and Elizabeth (Jones) Hill, was born in Fairfield, Conn., and died in 1727. He married Jane ——. He owned considerable real estate, and was prominent in the town. He later moved to New Haven.

*IV. Obadiah Hill*, son of John Hill, was born in October, 1697. He married Hannah Frost, who was born in June, 1706. Their children were: 1. Eunice, born March 28, 1731. 2. Sarah, May 20, 1732. 3. Mary, October 5, 1733. 4. Jared, mentioned below. There were other children, record of whom is lost.

*V. Lieutenant Jared Hill*, son of Obadiah and Hannah (Frost) Hill, was born in North Haven, Conn., on August 10, 1736. He married Eunice, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Mansfield) Tuttle, both descendants of pioneer colonists of New Haven. Jared Hill, the progenitor of the Waterbury Hills, removed there with his wife in 1784, and purchased a farm on East Mountain. They were the enee Woodruff, of Milford, Conn., and they have two daughters: Susanne Hill Leach, and Ruella Woodruff Leach, born May 8, 1818, died



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the French and Indian War, as a private, and had the reputation of a good soldier. He died April 20, 1816. His wife, born in 1739, died Dec. 28, 1826.

*VI. Samuel Hill*, son of Lieut. Jared and Eunice (Tuttle) Hill, was born in Waterbury, Conn., September 4, 1784. He was educated in the public schools of the city, and after finishing his education learned the carpenter's trade, which he followed during the summer months. He was a man of much literary ability, and a scholar, and during the winter months taught school in Waterbury. He was also a talented musician, and served as fife major in the 2nd Regiment from 1807 until 1818. Samuel Hill gained considerable distinction for poetic ability in Waterbury and the surrounding country. He married, Oct. 14, 1807, Polly Brockett, daughter of Giles and Sarah Brockett. (See Brockett VI). He died April 26, 1834, and after his death his family removed to Naugatuck, where his wife died Oct. 8, 1853. Both are buried in Grand Street Cemetery. Their children were: Henry Augustus, born Jan. 19, 1809; Junius Fayette, mentioned below; Sarah Maria, born April 14, 1816, died January 24, 1822; Eunice Hortensia, born Nov. 8, 1818; Ellen Maria; Robert Wakeman, mentioned below.

*VII. Junius Fayette Hill*, son of Samuel and Polly (Brockett) Hill, was born in Waterbury, Conn., July 11, 1811. He received his educational training in the public schools of Waterbury, and upon completing his education learned the carpenter's trade, which he followed for the remainder of his life. He later engaged in business independently, and became one of the leading builders and contractors of the city. He was a man of great business talent, and possessed great ability for organization and management. In addition to his prominence in the business world, he was also a leading figure in the political affairs of the city, always active in the interests of issues which he thought were a benefit to the community. He was nominated for the State Legislature on the Democratic ticket, but declined to accept. Mr. Hill was one of the best known and most thoroughly respected business men of Waterbury of the middle part of the last century, substantially successful, and highly honored. He died at Naugatuck, Connecticut, March 31, 1859. He was a prominent Mason, and a member of Shepard's Lodge, Naugatuck. He attended St. John's Episcopal Church.

Mr. Hill married Elizabeth Augusta Porter, daughter of Samuel Porter, of Naugatuck, Conn., May 4, 1835. She was born in Naugatuck, Sept. 21, 1812, and died at Waterbury, Jan. 9, 1899. Their children were: 1. Marie Louise, unmarried; resides at Woodmont, Conn. 2. Ellen Augusta, married Henry Leach, and resides at Woodmont, Conn.; children: Robert Hill Leach, married Florence Woodruff, of Milford, Conn., and they have two daughters: Susanne Hill Leach, and Ruella Woodruff Leach, born May 8, 1918, died





in infancy. Mr. Henry Leach was a native of New York City, and was educated there. Later in life he removed to Waterbury, Conn., where he became a pioneer rubber merchant, and one of the leading manufacturers of the city; he died in 1907, at the age of sixty-two. Mr. Leach was a member of the Masonic order, and of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and attended St. John's Episcopal Church. Mrs. Leach is a charter member of the Millicent Porter Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution. 3. Susie Elizabeth, mentioned below. 4. Caroline Eunice, died aged three years. 5. Lucy Brown, married Joseph Ives Doolittle, who died in 1907; she died in May, 1914, and is survived by her two sons, Trubee J. and Clarence Lewis, who reside at Woodmont, Connecticut.

*VII. Robert Wakeman Hill*, son of Samuel and Polly (Brockett) Hill, was born in Waterbury, Conn., Sept. 20, 1828, and received his early education there. He later removed to New Haven, Connecticut, and there attended the Young Men's Institute. After completing his studies there, he entered the offices of Mr. Henry Austin for the purpose of studying architecture. After thoroughly mastering the technicalities of his profession, he went to the State of Wisconsin and there engaged in business in the city of Milwaukee. After several years, during which he built up a splendid business, he returned to Waterbury, and there engaged in his work for the remainder of his life. Several of the most important public buildings of Waterbury, New Haven, Hartford and other large cities of the State of Connecticut are monuments to his genius as an architect. During his lifetime he was recognized as the leader of his profession in Waterbury. He was affiliated with the Republican party, but although he took a keen interest in politics he remained outside the circle of political influence. He was a well known figure in the financial life of the city, and at the time of his death was a member of the board of directors and vice-president of the Manufacturers' Bank of Waterbury. He was also a member of several social and fraternal organizations, a founder of the Waterbury Club, and a member of the Mason Clark Commandery. He was a communicant of St. John's Episcopal Church. Robert Wakeman Hill died on July 16, 1909.

*VIII. Susie Elizabeth Hill*, daughter of Junius Fayette and Elizabeth Augusta (Porter) Hill, was born in Waterbury, Conn. She is a resident of Waterbury, and devotes much time and attention to social and public welfare in the city, supporting generously charities and benevolences. Miss Hill takes a keen interest in the issues of importance in the life of the city. She is a member of the Millicent Porter Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, the Mattatux Historical Society, and the Naturalist Club. She is also prominent in the social life of Waterbury.



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Tuttle Line.)

*Arms*—Azure on a bend doubly cotised argent a lion passant sable.

*Crest*—On a mount vert a turtle-dove proper; in the beak a sprig vert, fructed or.

*Motto*—*Pax.*

Ranking among the foremost of New England families, but belonging inseparably to the history and development of Connecticut is the Tuttle family. Branches of the ancient English family, however, were established throughout the New England Colonies in the early part of the seventeenth century. None of these have attained the distinction and note of the Connecticut Tuttles. Scions of the house have wielded large power in the industrial and commercial growth of Connecticut, and have achieved notable places in the professions and in the divine calling. The early Tuttle family played a prominent part in the public life of the Connecticut Colony, and the name is found with great frequency in important places in early Colonial registers. The early Tuttles were leaders of men, and later generations have not relinquished the prestige of the early family. The Tuttles of today are an honored and notable race.

The surname Tuttle is of most remote antiquity, and its origin has been traced to the god Thoth or Toth on the Lower Nile in Egypt, vestiges of whose worship some antiquarians believe to have existed in early England. This would naturally give rise to numerous places dedicated to the worship of the god. At all events, we find throughout England "Totehills," which at the date of authentic history were hills with a good lookout against the enemy's approach. The eminent authority, Charles Wareing Bardsley, in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," states the origin of the surname to have been in the ancient Totehill, and makes no mention of an earlier origin in the worship of Thoth. In support of this, he draws attention to the fact that we still use the verb "tout" or "toat" in the sense of spying about.

When the adoption of surnames spread over England, Toathill, Tootle, Tothill, Tootol, Tottle, Tootehill, Tuthill, Touthill and Tuttle appeared as surnames which had their origin in the place name "Totehill." and we find instances of the name in the very early registers. The first appearance of the name in Colonial America is in the year 1635. Numerous immigrants left the mother country and were the founders of large families. On the good ship "Planter," in 1635, came John, Richard and William Tuttle, from the parish of St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, bringing with them their families. John Tuttle, who is recorded as a mercer, aged thirty-nine years, according to the passenger list of the "Planter," settled in Ipswich; he was in Ireland in 1654, and probably died there, for his wife went to Carrickfergus, and wrote on April 6, 1657, that he died on December 30, 1656.



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Richard Tuttle, aged forty-two, settled in Boston, where he died May 8, 1640. William Tuttle, who was the founder of the line herein under consideration, settled first in Charlestown, Massachusetts, but was prominent in New Haven as early as 1647. Henry Tuttle was in Hingham in 1635, in which year he arrived with his brother John. He settled in Southold, Long Island, and John returned to England and settled at Weybread, County Suffolk. Still another John Tuttle came in the ship "Angel Gabriel," and settled in Dover, New Hampshire, there founding the New Hampshire branch of the Tuttle family.

*I. William Tuttle*, the immigrant ancestor, came from St. Albans parish, Hertfordshire, England, on the ship "Planter" in April, 1635, with his brothers, John and Richard and their families. He stated his age as twenty-six. His wife Elizabeth, aged twenty-three, and children; John, aged three and a half, and Thomas, aged three months, came at the same time. His occupation was given as husbandman. His wife joined the church at Boston, August 14, 1636. As early as 1636 he was granted the liberty to build a windmill at Charlestown, and was a proprietor of that town in 1636. His wife was dismissed to the church at Ipswich, Sept. 8, 1639, and they doubtless were there for a time. He was part owner of a ketch "Zebulon," of Ipswich, and was associated to some extent in business with John Tuttle, of Ipswich. He and John owned land deeded to them by George Griggs for debt, and the same George Griggs gave him a mortgage of house and land on Beacon street, Boston, October 8, 1650, after William Tuttle had moved to New Haven. About 1639 William Tuttle moved to Quinnipiac, later called New Haven. In 1641 he was the owner of the home lot of Edward Hopkins, who had removed to Hartford. This lot was on the square bounded by Grove, State, Elm and Church streets. In 1656 William Tuttle bought of Joshua Atwater his original allotment, mansion house and barn, with other lands. He made his home there until his death, and his widow after him until her death, a period of twenty-eight years. At the time of his death it was appraised at £120. He shared in the division of common lands in 1640 and afterwards. William Tuttle and Mr. Gregson were the first owners of land in East Haven, Connecticut, and Mr. Tuttle surveyed and laid out the road from Red Rock to Stony River. His land there was bounded by a line running from the old ferry (where the new bridge over the Quinnipiac now is) eastward to a spring where issues the small stream called Tuttle's brook, then south along this brook to Gregson's land at Solitary cove, thence west to a point on the New Haven harbor near the chemical works and Fort Hale, thence north along the harbor to the point of beginning. It included Tuttle's Hill.

In 1659 he became owner of land at North Haven. He sold or conveyed to his children most of his property before he died. Judging



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

from the seat he was assigned in the meeting-house, he was among the foremost men of New Haven as early as 1646. He was interested in the projected settlement from New Haven on the Delaware, which failed on account of the opposition of the Dutch in New Netherlands. He filled many positions of trust and responsibility in the colony; was commissioner to decide on an equivalent to those who received inferior meadow lands in the first allotment; was fence viewer, 1644; road commissioner, 1646; commissioner to settle the dispute as to boundary between New Haven and Branford, 1669, and to fix the bounds of New Haven, Milford, Branford and Wallingford, 1672. He was often a juror and arbitrator; was constable in 1666. He died early in June, 1673, his inventory being dated June 6, 1673. His wife died Dec. 30, 1684, aged seventy-two years. She had been living with her youngest son Nathaniel, who presented her will, but the other children objected and it was not allowed. The inventory of her estate is dated February 3, 1685. Her gravestone was removed, with the others, from the Old Green to the Grove Street Cemetery, 1821, and it now stands in a row along the north wall of the cemetery, but part of the inscription is gone.

Children: 1. John, mentioned below. 2. Hannah, born 1632, in England. 3. Thomas, born 1634, in England. 4. Johnathan, bapt. in Charlestown, Mass., July 8, 1637. 5. David, bapt. in Charlestown, April 7, 1639. 6. Joseph, bapt. in New Haven, Nov. 22, 1640. 7. Sarah, bapt. April, 1642. 8. Elizabeth, bapt. Nov. 9, 1645. 9. Simon, bapt. March 28, 1647. 10. Benjamin, bapt. Oct. 29, 1648. 11. Mercy, born April 27, 1650. 12. Nathaniel, bapt. Feb. 29, 1652.

*II. John Tuttle*, son of William Tuttle, was born in England in 1631, and came to this country with his parents in 1635. He received a house and lot in East Haven, by deed of his father, 1661, and sold it to John Potter the following year, and also, about the same time, sold land at Stony River, which was a part of his patrimony. In these conveyances he is called "junior." At the court in New Haven, Nov. 23, 1662, he requested that he might have liberty to purchase land from the Indians beyond Chestnut Hill.

He married, Nov. 8, 1653, Kattareen, daughter of John Lane, of Milford, Conn., born 1630, died 1669, leaving a good estate. He died November 12, 1683. Children: 1. Hannah, born Nov. 2, 1655. 2. John, Sept. 15, 1657. 3. Samuel, mentioned below. 4. Sarah, born Jan. 22, 1661-62. 5-6. Daniel and Mary (twins), April 13, 1664.

*III. Samuel Tuttle*, son of John Tuttle, was born Jan. 9, 1659-60. He was a stone mason by trade, and a large land owner. He married (first) June, 1683, Sarah, daughter of Samuel Newman, of New Haven. He married (second) Abigail, daughter of John and Mercy Frost and widow of Thomas Barnes. He and his wife, Sarah, joined the church in New Haven, 1692. He died between 1731 and 1733. His second wife was the mother of fifteen children, and her third of





## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the estate was divided to the heirs of Samuel Tuttle, 1748. Children: 1. Mary, born Jan. 31, 1684-85. 2. Jemima, Dec. 6, 1686. 3. Stephen, married Rachel Mansfield. 4. Abigail, born April 4, 1692. 5. Martha, March 18, 1694. 6. Josiah, April 5, 1696. 7. Sarah, Jan. 17, 1698. 8. Daniel, mentioned below.

IV. *Daniel Tuttle*, son of Samuel Tuttle, was born August 23, 1702. He married, April 25, 1726, Mary Mansfield, sister of Ebenezer Mansfield. His will was presented 1772, and names wife Mary as executrix, and Samuel Tuttle as executor. Children (record incomplete): 1. Sammel, born Feb. 12, 1727. 2. Daniel, born March 12, 1728; married Christian, daughter of Ebenezer Norton. 3. Mary, married, Jan. 17, 1755, Jacob Brackett; died June 20, 1760. 4. Eunice, born 1739.

V. *Eunice Tuttle*, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Mansfield) Tuttle, was born in 1739. She married Lieut. Jared Hill, of North Haven and Waterbury, Conn. (See Hill V.)

(The Brackett Line.)

*Arms*—Or, a cross patonce, sable.

*Crest*—A stag lodged sable, ducally gorged and lined, or,

*Motto*—*Crux mea lux*.

The name of Brackett is a very old and honored one, and appears very early in the records of English history, and is traced authentically to the year 1201 A. D. It is of Saxon origin and in all probability was established in England at the time of the Saxon invasion in the seventh century A. D. The family has always been held in high repute locally, and is connected through marriage with several of the most noble lineages in England. Several of its members fought in the Crusades, and a mark of the trend of the times as well as of the character of the house is found in the motto still retained in the Brackett coat-of-arms, namely, *Crux mea lux*—The cross my light.

The Brocketts have from time to time acquired the following manors: Manor of Almshoebury, Letchworth, Rathamsted, Ayot St. Lawrence, Ayot St. Peter, Offley Magna, Mandlesen, Spain's Hall. Brackett Hall, the ancestral home of the family, was located in Wheathamstead, County Herts, originally described as Watamstede, in the Domesday Book. This estate originally adjoined Hatfield, which is noted in history. In the year 1312 Brackett Hall was the meeting place of the Barons in their war against Edward II.

A tradition which has existed for two hundred years in New Haven traces the ancestry of the progenitor of the American Brocketts, John Brackett, to this famous English family, above mentioned. John Brackett is thought to have been the eldest son of Sir John Brackett, of Brackett Hall, Hertsfordshire, England, disinherited because of his sympathies with Puritanism, then gaining a strong



foothold in England. Because of persecution of Puritanism and family disagreement, John Brockett came to America, in 1637.

1. *John Brockett*, the first of that patronymic to be mentioned in records in this country, was born in England, in 1609, and came to America in 1637, probably in the ship "Hector," arriving in Boston, June 26, 1637, in company with Rev. John Davenport and Theophilus Eaton. It is said of the little band which accompanied the Rev. John Davenport "They were gentlemen of wealth and character, with their servants and household effects. They were for the most part from London, and had been bred to mercantile and commercial pursuits. Their coming was hailed at Boston with much joy, for they were the most opulent of the companies who had emigrated to New England."

These men were unwilling to join the Massachusetts Colony, and explored the coast of Long Island in search of a site on which to settle. They selected a tract of land near the Quinnipiac river, the site of the present city of New Haven, and left seven of their number to hold it for the winter. In the spring of the following year Rev. Mr. Davenport and a company of men among whom was John Brockett, reached the site, bought the ground from the Indians, and set up an independent government or "Plantation Covenant," founded, as were all the early governments of New England, on a stern religious basis. They called the town which they founded New Haven.

In the early Colonial records of New England, and New Haven, the name of John Brockett appears more often than any other name with the exception of Theophilus Eaton. He was a man of importance and influence in the civic organization, and because of his ability and excellent judgment was often called upon to represent the community. In the settling of difficulties with the Indian tribes of the neighborhood he was appointed "one of a committee of four to investigate and advise with the Indians." He was also appointed commissioner to settle the question as to boundary lines between the Connecticut Colony at Hartford and the New Haven Colony. John Brockett was skilled and well known as a civil engineer and surveyor, and his services were often needed in the town. In June, 1639, he laid out the square which is now the center of the city of New Haven, in nine equal sections, calling forth mention in the Colonial Records for the perfection of his work. Shortly thereafter the governor of New Jersey deputed John Brockett "to lay out, survey, and bound the said bounds of Elizabeth Towne, (now the city of Elizabeth, N. J.), the planting fields, town lots, and to lay out every particular man's proposition, according to his allotments and the directions of the Governor, for the avoiding of all controversies and disputes concerning the same, having had certain notice of the good experience, knowledge, skill and faithfulness of John Brockett in the surveying and laying out of land."



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

As a reward for his services in the above instance, he was allotted a portion of land in Elizabeth, which he held until 1670, when he sold it to one Samuel Hopkins. During the time he was surveying in Elizabeth Towne (from December, 1667 to 1670), John Brockett lived there, and became an important member of the community, and was chosen, with John Ogden, Senior, to represent the town in the House of Burgesses. One of the Connecticut religious papers, published in 1868, refers to John Brockett as follows: "John Brockett, the eldest son of Sir John Brockett, of the County of Herts, England, was a well known loyalist of the time of Charles I., becoming convinced of the truth of the gospel as preached by the Puritans, relinquished his birthright and all his prospects of honor and fame, joined himself to the little company of Rev. John Davenport, emigrated to New England and settled at New Haven in 1637. Of him, as of Moses, it could be said that he preferred to suffer affliction with the people of God than to enjoy the pleasures of Sin for a season."

There is no records of his marriage. However, a seat was assigned in the church to "Sister Brockett" in 1646. It is supposed that John Brockett married in England in 1640 or 1641, during which time he returned to England for a visit. He did not, however, bring his wife to America until 1644 or 1645. He was appointed surgeon in King Philip's War, and was deputy to the General Court of Connecticut during the years 1671-78-80-82-85. In the autumn of 1669, John Brockett was one of the men appointed by the one hundred settlers of Wallingford, an off-shoot of the New Haven Colony, "to manage all plantation affairs in ye said village." In the first allotment of land in Wallingford, John Brockett received twelve acres, and his son John eight acres. His house lot was "No. 1 at the extreme south end of the village, forty rods long and twenty rods wide, subsequently extended to Wharton's Brook."

He was one of the thirteen men who founded the Congregational church at Wallingford, deciding "that there be a church of Christ gathered to walk according to the Congregational way." John Brockett died in Wallingford, Conn., on March 12, 1690, at the age of eighty years. His children were: 1. John, mentioned below. 2. Benjamin, born Feb. 23, 1645, died same year. 3. Fruitful, twin of Benjamin. 4. Mary, born Sept. 25, 1646; married Ephraim Pennington. 5. Silence, born Jan. 4, 1648; married, at Milford, Mass., Oct. 25, 1667, Joseph Bradley. 6. Benjamin, born Dec., 1648, married Elizabeth Barnes. 7. Abigail, born March 10, 1650; married, Jan. 22, 1673, John Payne; died July 4, 1729. 8. Samuel, born Jan. 14, 1652; married Sarah Bradley. 9. Jabez, born and died in 1654. 10. Jabez, born Oct. 24, 1656; married Dorothy Lyman.

*II. John (2) Brockett*, son of John (1) Brockett, the progenitor, was born in New Haven in 1642, and was baptized Jan. 31, 1643. He was educated at Oxford University in England for the medical pro-



fession. Upon returning to America he began to practice in New Haven, but soon located at Muddy River, near North Haven, between New Haven and Wallingford, where he remained during his lifetime. He owned a large and carefully selected library of valuable medical books, which he gave to Yale College at his death. In the first allotment of land in Wallingford he received eight acres, as has already been mentioned. In 1689 he was given forty-four acres. He was the first physician to permanently reside in the New Haven Colony, and as such was a man of importance. Under his father's will, Dr. John Brockett received large quantities of land, and in addition to his practice, he carried on extensive farming. He married Elizabeth Doolittle, daughter of Abraham Doolittle, one of the men elected with John Brockett, Sr., to manage the affairs of Wallingford. She was born April 12, 1652, and died March, 1731.

Dr. John Brockett died in November, 1720, and his will, dated New Haven, August 31, 1720, gives all his property to his widow, who was his sole executrix. Their children were: 1. Mary, born May 6, 1673, died 1673. 2. Mary, born Feb. 18, 1674; married Lawrence Clinton. 3. John, born Oct. 23, 1676, died Nov. 29, 1676. 4. Elizabeth, born Nov. 26, 1677; married, Oct. 12, 1710, at Wallingford, Conn., John Granis. 5. Benjamin, born and died in 1679. 6. Moses, mentioned below. 7. Abigail, born March 31, 1683; married, July 9, 1712, John Pardee; died August 2, 1752. 8. John, born Sept. 13, 1686, died Nov. 17, 1709. 9. Samuel, born Nov. 8, 1691; married, August 5, 1712, Mehitable Hill, daughter of John Hill.

*III. Moses Brockett*, son of John (2) and Elizabeth (Doolittle) Brockett, was born in Wallingford, Conn., April 23, 1680. He married Ann Lydia Granis, on Jan. 8, 1706, and was among the earliest settlers at Muddy River. He was a wealthy farmer and land owner, one single piece of land being one mile in width and two miles long. He was an active member of the First Ecclesiastical Society, and his name is recorded in the manuscript notes of President Ezra Stiles of Yale College. His wife died April 6, 1742. He died Nov. 5, 1764.

Their children were: 1. Anne, born Sept. 27, 1707; married, March 25, 1728, Daniel Barnes. 2. Silence, born Nov. 3, 1709; married a Mr. Frisbee. 3. Lydia, born August 28, 1712; married, Nov. 29, 1744, Henry Barnes. 4. Moses, born Jan. 17, 1714; married Priscilla Granis. 5. Samuel, born March, 1715. 6. Benjamin, born Dec., 1717. 7. Elizabeth, born May 9, 1718; married, July 14, 1747, Jared Robinson. 8. Mary, born June 26, 1719; married, July 18, 1749, John Jacobs. 9. Abraham, born May 19, 1721, died April 7, 1774. 10. Abigail, twin of Abraham, married a Mr. Barnes. 11. John, born Dec. 31, 1722; married (first) Thankful Frost; (second) M. Cooper. 12. Ebenezer, born July, 1724; married Esther Headley. 13. Abel, born August 11, 1725; married, July 24, 1755, Hannah Pierpont. 14. Richard, mentioned below. 15. Stephen, born March 20, 1729; mar-

on -  
London 1712  
Lydia Hunt  
Ref. [unclear]  
[unclear]





ried, March 27, 1771, Mabel M. Barnes. 16. Sarah, born May 29, 1731; married, Sept. 16, 1771, Stephen Hitchcock. 17. Ichabod, born Nov., 1733. 18. Keziah, born June 13, 1735; married a Mr. Thomas Sanford. 17/26/1742

IV. *Richard Brockett*, son of Moses and Ann Lydia (Granis) Brockett, was born Sept. 11, 1727. On March 13, 1756, he married Mary Pierpont, daughter of Joseph and Hannah (Russell) Pierpont. (See Pierpont IV). She was a granddaughter of Rev. James Pierpont, one of the founders of Yale College and for thirty years pastor of the First Church in New Haven, Connecticut. She was also a granddaughter of the Rev. Thomas Hooker, one of the founders of the Connecticut Colony at Hartford. She was born Oct. 20, 1738, and died June 21, 1773. In 1760 Richard Brockett and Mary, his wife, were members of the Congregational church in New Haven. On Dec. 14, 1790, seventeen years after the death of his first wife, he married a widow, Jerina Jacobs, who survived him and died Sept. 7, 1830. The children of Richard and Mary (Pierpont) Brockett were: 1. Joseph, born Jan. 17, 1757; married Rebecca Tuttle. 2. Mary, born March 13, 1759; married, June 16, 1779, James Ives, of Great Barrington. 3. Giles, mentioned below. 4. Lydia, born Nov. 29, 1763; married, Feb. 22, 1787, Philomen Blakesbee. 5. Richard, born Jan., 1768. 6. Jesse, born Jan. 16, 1770, died Jan. 17, 1770. 7. Jesse, born Feb. 10, 1772, died Feb. 13, 1772.

V. *Giles Brockett*, son of Richard and Mary (Pierpont) Brockett, was born in North Haven, Conn., April 30, 1761. During the Revolutionary War he enlisted in 1778 with the Connecticut troops under Colonel Mead. His name is on the pension list in 1832. At the close of the war he decided to become a sailor, but after one or two voyages to the West Indies returned to North Haven and became a farmer. He was a public man and quite prominent in his community. He was deputy to the General Court in 1804, and representative in the Connecticut State Legislature in 1809. He married, Nov. 17, 1785, Sarah Smith, daughter of Captain Stephen Smith, of New Haven. She was born July 10, 1768, and died Nov. 27, 1841. Giles Brockett was a Mason, and he and his wife were members of the First Congregational Church in Waterbury, where they removed in 1803. He died there June 2, 1842. Their children were: 1. Polly, mentioned below. 2. Sarah, born Jan. 20, 1789; married Samuel D. Castle. 3. Patty, born April 29, 1791; married A. H. Johnson. 4. Harriet, born March 28, 1794; married Col. Samuel Peck. 5. Roswell, born July 17, 1796, died, unmarried, in Greenville, Mich., April 1, 1853. 6. Lydia, born July 17, 1798; married Smith Miller.

VI. *Polly Brockett*, daughter of Giles and Sarah (Smith) Brockett, was born Dec. 21, 1786. She married Samuel Hill, of Waterbury (see Hill VI.) Oct. 14, 1807. They had six children: 1. Henry A., born Jan. 19, 1809. 2. Junius F. (see Hill VII). 3. Sarah M.,



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

born April 4, 1816, died Jan. 24, 1822. 4. Eunice H., born Nov. 8, 1818, died April 1, 1890, unmarried. 5. Ellen M., born June 19, 1824, in Waterbury, died April 29, 1896, in Oneonta, N. Y., married John Benjamin Taylor, March 4, 1844, in Naugatuck, Conn. 6. Robert W. (see Hill VII).

(The Pierpont Line.)

*Arms*—Argent, semée of cinquefoils, gules. A lion rampant, sable.

*Crest*—A fox passant proper, on a wreath.

*Motto*—*Pie respone te.*

The Pierpont family is of Norman origin, antedating the Norman Conquest. The Castle of Pierrepont took its name in the time of Charlemagne from a stone bridge built to replace a ferry on the estate of Pierrepont, which is located in the southern part of Picardy, in the diocese of Laon, about six miles south of Saint Saver, Normandy. The first lord of whom we have authentic information was Sir Hugh de Pierrepont, who flourished about 980 A. D. He was succeeded by his son, Sir Godfrey de Pierrepont, who was the father of Sir Godfrey de Pierrepont, who left two sons, Sir Godfrey de Pierrepont and Sir Robert de Pierrepont. This Sir Godfrey de Pierrepont was the father of Sir Ingolbrand de Pierrepont, lord of the Castle about 1090 A. D. and ancestor of the French family of the name. Sir Robert de Pierrepont went to England in the train of William the Conqueror, and was the founder of the English family.

The seventh in descent from Robert de Pierrepont was Sir Henry, of Holme Pierpont, in the right of his wife Annora, daughter of Michael Manversm, Lord of Holme. Later, Robert Pierpont was created Earl of Kingston, in 1628. His last male descendant was Evelyn Pierpont, second Duke of Kingston, who died in 1773. Robert, Earl of Kingston, had a younger brother, William Pierpont, who was the father of James Pierpont, the immigrant ancestor of the American family.

*I. James Pierpont*, founder of the family herein dealt with, emigrated to America with two sons: John, mentioned below; and Robert.

*II. John Pierpont*, son of James Pierpont, was born in London, England, in 1619, and came to America with his father, settling in Roxbury, Massachusetts, now a part of Boston, where he bought three hundred acres of land. He was a deputy to the General Court. He died in 1682. He married Thankful Stow. Their children were: 1. Thankful, born Nov. 26, 1649, died young. 2. John, born July 22, 1651, died young. 3. John, born Oct. 28, 1652. 4. Experience, born Jan. 4, 1655. 5. Infant, born August 3, 1657, died young. 6. James, mentioned below. 7. Ebenezer, born Dec. 21, 1661. 8. Thankful, born November 18, 1663. 9. Joseph, born April 6, 1666. 10. Benjamin, born July 26, 1668.



*III. Rev. James (2) Pierpont*, son of John and Thankful (Stow) Pierpont, was born in Roxbury, Mass., Jan. 4, 1659. He was graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1681, and three years later preached before the church in New Haven as a candidate. He was an able preacher, and in addition to his ability won the love and confidence of the congregation. He was ordained and settled as its pastor in 1685, and resided in New Haven until his death, thirty years later. He was the successor of the Rev. John Davenport, and through the influence of his position in the community, and the recognized value of his counsel, he was able to revive and carry out John Davenport's long-cherished plan for a college in Connecticut. Through his influence and efforts the original board of trustees of Yale College was organized, a charter secured, and a rector appointed. Tradition also states that he presented six of the original forty-two books which were the foundation of the College Library. Mr. Pierpont has been called the "Founder of Yale." Largely through his energy and foresight the college was established, and he guided it through the early struggle for a firm footing. He was instrumental also in securing Elihu Yale's gifts. Rev. James Pierpont was a member of the Saybrook Synod in 1708, and is said to have drawn up the articles of the famous "Saybrook Platform," which aimed to promote discipline and closer fellowship among the churches of Connecticut. He was one of the leaders of the Synod, and was noted throughout New England for the nobility of his character and the spirituality of his life. His only publication was a sermon preached in Cotton Mather's pulpit in 1712, "Sundry False Hopes of Heaven Discovered and Decried."

He married (first) Abigail, granddaughter of John Davenport, Oct. 27, 1691, who died Feb. 3, 1692. He married (second) May 30, 1694, at Hartford, Conn., Sarah, daughter of Rev. Joseph Haynes; she died Oct. 7, 1696. He married (third) in 1698, Mary Hooker, born July 3, 1673, died Nov. 1, 1740, daughter of Rev. Samuel Hooker, of Farmington, and a granddaughter of Rev. Thomas Hooker, of Hartford, Connecticut. Child of second wife: Abigail, born Sept. 19, 1696. Children of third wife: 1. James, born May 21, 1699. 2. Samuel, born Dec. 30, 1700. 3. Mary, born Nov. 23, 1702. 4. Joseph, mentioned below. 5. Benjamin, born July 18, 1706, died Dec. 17, 1706. 6. Benjamin, born Oct. 15, 1707; graduate of Yale College, 1726. 7. Sarah, born Jan. 9, 1709; married Jonathan Edwards, the noted divine. 8. Hezekiah, born May 6, 1712.

Rev. James Pierpont died Nov. 2, 1714, and is buried under the present Centre Church in New Haven. A memorial tablet in this church has upon it the chief facts of his life, the engraved arms of the Pierpont family, and the following inscription: "His gracious gifts and fervent piety, elegant and winning manners were devoutly spent in the services of his Lord and Master." Among the lineal de-



scendants of James Pierpont were Jonathan Edwards, the younger, his grandson; the elder President Timothy Dwight, his great-grandson; and the younger President Timothy Dwight, late president of Yale College. His portrait, which was presented to the College, hangs in Alumni Hall.

*IV. Joseph Pierpont*, son of Rev. James (2) and Mary (Hooker) Pierpont, was born in New Haven, Conn., Oct. 21, 1704. He married Hannah Russell, who died in 1748. Among their children was Mary, who married, March 13, 1756, Richard Brockett, son of Moses and Lydia Ann (Granis) Brockett. (See Brockett IV). She was born Oct. 20, 1738, and died June 21, 1773.

(The Hooker Line.)

*Arms*—Sable a fesse between six fleurs-de-lis argent.

*Crest*—A demi-eagle displayed gules, charged on the breast with a ducal coronet, or.

The posterity of the famous Puritan divine, Rev. Thomas Hooker, has occupied a position of influence in New England for a period of two hundred and fifty years. Hooker, himself, is one of the most famous figures in early New England civic and secular life. Of his early parentage, two generations have been traced as follows:

*I. John Hooker*, grandfather of the American immigrant, was of Devonshire, England. He had a brother, Roger Hooker, and a sister Mary, who married John Russell, of Leicestershire. Children: 1. John, who lived in Somersetshire. 2. Thomas, mentioned below. 3. Rev. Zachariah, rector of St. Michael's, Cathays, Cornwall.

*II. Thomas Hooker*, son of John Hooker, was of Devonshire. He was the father of three children: 1. A daughter, who became the wife of Dr. George Aleock. 2. Rev. Thomas, mentioned below. 3. Dorothy, married John Chester, of Leicestershire.

*III. Rev. Thomas (2) Hooker*, son of Thomas (1) Hooker, was born at Marfield, Leicestershire, England, July 7, 1586. He became one of the most liberal as well as one of the ablest and most intellectual of New England's early theologians. His early training, environment and education fitted him well for the part he was to play in New England affairs. Cotton Mather, in his "Magnalia," says of him: "He was born of parents that were neither unable nor unwilling to bestow upon him a liberal education; whereunto the early lively sparkles of wit observed in him did very much to encourage them. His natural temper was cheerful and courteous; but it was accompanied with such a grandeur of mind, as caused his friends without the help of astrology, to prognosticate that he was born to be considerable." Regarding his education and conversion, Sprague says: "He was educated at Emanuel College, Cambridge, of which in due time he became a Fellow. He acquitted himself in this office with such ability and fidelity as to secure universal respect and admiration. It was while he was thus employed that he became





deeply impressed with the importance of eternal realities, and after a protracted season of bitter anguish of spirit, he was enabled to submit without reserve to the terms of the Gospel, and thus find peace and joy in believing. His religious experience, in its very commencement, seems to have been uncommonly deep and thorough, and no doubt it was partly owing to this that he became much distinguished, in after life, as a counsellor, comforter and guide, to the awakened and desponding."

In 1608 he was graduated from Emanuel College, Cambridge, with the degree of B. A. This was the intellectual center of Puritanism, and he remained to take his Master's degree in 1611. About 1626, after preaching in the parish of Esher in Surrey, he became a lecturer in the Church of St. Mary, at Chelmsford, Essex, delivering on market days and Sunday afternoons evangelical addresses which were noted for their moral fervor. In 1629 Archbishop Laud took measures to suppress church lectureships, which were an innovation of Puritanism. Hooker was placed under bond and retired to Little Baddon, four miles from Chelmsford. In 1630 he was cited to appear before the Court of High Commission, but forfeited his bond and fled to Holland. Mr. Hooker remained in Holland three years, and was first employed as an assistant of Mr. Paget at Amsterdam. On account of a misunderstanding with him, Mr. Hooker removed to Delft, and was associated with Rev. Mr. Forbes, a Scotch minister. Two years later he accepted a call to Rotterdam to assist the Rev. Dr. William Ames. Dr. Ames is said to have remarked that he never met a man equal to Mr. Hooker as a preacher or a learned disputant.

Mr. Hooker decided to go to New England, but wished to return to England first, as the times were supposed to be somewhat more tolerant. On his arrival there, however, he found that his enemies were still active, and he was obliged to live in concealment until his departure to New England. He left England about the middle of July, 1633, from the Downs, on the ship "Griffin." Such was his peril that he and his friend, Mr. Cotton, were obliged to remain concealed until the ship was well out to sea. He arrived at Boston, Mass., Sept. 4, 1633, and on Oct. 11 he was chosen pastor of the church at Newton (Cambridge). He remained there, to the great satisfaction of the people, for two and one-half years. In June, 1636, he joined the company of those who went to make a settlement at Hartford, Conn., and from this time was identified with almost all the important public movements of the colony. He was one of the moderators of the first New England Synod held at Cambridge, in the case of the famous Anne Hutchinson. He published many books and sermons between 1637 and his death. He fell a victim of a violent epidemic disease, and died July 7, 1647.

Rev. Thomas Hooker was a leader of great liberality, free from the characteristic bigotry and narrowness of his time. He publicly



criticized the limitation of suffrage to church members, and according to William Hubbard, a contemporary historian, "After Mr. Hooker's coming over it was observed that many of the freemen grew to be very jealous of their liberties." In a sermon before the Connecticut General Court, in 1638, he declared that "the choice of public magistrates belongs to the people by God's allowance and that they who had the power to appoint magistrates, it is in their power to set the bounds and limitations of the power and place into which they call them." In advancing this theory, Hooker was greatly ahead of his age, yet even he had no conception of the separation of church and state, as is shown in his own words: "The privilege of election, which belong to the people, must be exercised, according to the blessed will and love of God." Hooker was also a champion of the right of magistrates to convene Synods, and in the Fundamental Orders of Connecticut (1639), which it is thought he framed, the union of church and state is presupposed. Hooker was pastor of the Hartford church until his death on July 7, 1647. He was from the time of the founding of the colony one of the foremost figures in the religious and public life. He was active in the formation of the New England Confederation in 1643, and in the same year attended the meeting of Puritan ministers at Boston, whose object was to defend Congregationalism. In 1648 he wrote a "Survey of the Summe of Church Discipline, in justification of New England's church system." In 1638 he was the author of "The Soule's Humiliation," in which he assigns as a test of conversion willingness of the convert to be damned if it be God's will.

Rev. Thomas Hooker married, according to family tradition, a sister of John Pym. Children: 1. Rev. John, a minister of the Established Church in England. 2. Joanna, born about 1616, died 1646. 3. Mary, born 1618. 4. Sarah, married Rev. John Wilson. 5. Daughter, married and became a widow. 6. Samuel, mentioned below.

*IV. Rev. Samuel Hooker*, son of Rev. Thomas (2) Hooker, was born in 1633, and was educated at Harvard College, graduating in 1663. He succeeded Rev. Roger Newton, his brother-in-law, and was second pastor of the church at Farmington, Conn., where he was ordained in July, 1661. He was on a committee of four in 1662 to treat with the New Haven Colony in reference to the proposed union with Connecticut under one colonial government. All of the descendants of Rev. Thomas Hooker bearing the surname Hooker are also his descendants. He was a Fellow of Harvard, and on account of his earnestness and piety was called "the fervent Hooker." He had the habit of committing his sermons to memory, and was a powerful and effective preacher. He died at Farmington, Nov. 6, 1697.

He married, Sept. 22, 1658, Mary Willett, born at Plymouth, May



## HILL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

4, 1643, daughter of Captain Thomas Willett, of Swansea, Mass., afterwards Seekonk, Rhode Island. Her mother was Mary (Brown) Willett. Mary Hooker married (second) August 10, 1703, Rev. Thomas Buckingham, of Saybrook, Conn. Children of Rev. Samuel and Mary Hooker: 1. Dr. Thomas, born June 10, 1659. 2. Samuel, May 22, 1661. 3. William, May 11, 1663, merchant at Farmington. 4. John, February 20, 1664-65. 5. Hon. James, Oct. 27, 1666, resided at Guilford, Conn. 6. Roger, Sept. 14, 1668, died unmarried, 1697-98; resided at Hartford. 7. Nathaniel, Sept. 28, 1671, died 1711. 8. Mary, mentioned below. 9. Hezekiah, Nov. 7, 1675, died 1686. 10. Daniel, March 25, 1679. 11. Sarah, May 5, 1681; married Rev. Stephen Buckingham, of Norwalk, Conn.

V. *Mary Hooker*, daughter of Rev. Samuel and Mary (Willett) Hooker, was born in New Haven, Conn., July 3, 1673. She married Rev. James Pierpont, the noted divine of New Haven (see Pierpont III) and mother of Sarah, who married the celebrated Rev. Jonathan Edwards.





## Brockway and Allied Families

*Arms*—Gules a fleur-de-lis argent, on a chief of the second (argent), a lion passant guardant of the first (gules). Two bars wavy, each charged with three pales wavy, gules.  
*Crest*—An escallop or.



THE Register General of Great Britain (1891) states that the name Brockway is unknown in Scotland and Ireland, and uncommon in England and Wales. It is thought to have been derived from the Old English name Brock. In compiling the genealogy of the Brockway family in America, it was ascertained that all of the name in America prior to 1850 were descendants of Wolston Brockway, who emigrated to Connecticut in the middle part of the seventeenth century.

Wolston Brockway, immigrant ancestor of the Brockway family, was born in England, about 1638, and came to America early in life. He settled in the Connecticut Colony, at Lyme, which has since been the principal seat of the Brockways, and from which center branches have spread over the entire country. Wolston Brockway purchased much property in Lyme, and this with slight changes is still in the hands of lineal descendants. The family is one of the most prominent in the vicinity of Lyme among many who boast historic lineage. The progenitor married, at Lyme, Connecticut, Hannah Bridges, daughter of William Bridges; she died Feb. 6, 1687.

The late Ulysses Hayden Brockway was a member of this distinguished old family. He was born in Hamburg, in the town of Lyme, Connecticut, July 19, 1851, the son of Jedediah and Elizabeth (Lord) Brockway. He received his early education in the public schools of the town. When he was but slightly over ten years old the Civil War broke out. Too young to go to war, he became a drummer boy for the recruits which were drilled at Lyme. The stirring events of the conflict inculcated in him a spirit of adventure and an ambition which school and the drudgery of farm life could not satisfy, and at the age of sixteen years he left Lyme and came to Hartford, which city remained his home throughout his life. He became thoroughly identified with its business, political, social and fraternal life.

Mr. Brockway secured his first employment in the tailoring business, in which he himself later became an employer. He entered the oldest tailoring establishment in the city of Hartford, that founded in 1824 by Robert Buell, and at the time owned by Franklin Clark. He rapidly became one of the most valued employees in the establishment, and on the retirement of Franklin Clark in 1878, Mr. Brockway, in partnership with Mr. J. H. W. Wenk, continued the business





under the firm name of Wenk & Brockway. After a period of eight years of successful business, Mr. Brockway became sole owner, and from that time until his death conducted it under the name of U. H. Brockway & Company. The business was in every way a success, and under the management of Mr. Brockway became one of the most important commercial enterprises of its kind in Hartford. As the leading figure in a large industry in the city of Hartford, Mr. Brockway was well known by the people. He was universally admired and respected for the honesty of his business dealings.

He was deeply interested in the political affairs of the city, through motives of a purely disinterested nature. He was in no way an office-seeker. However, he was admirably fitted for public service by reason of his keen business perception, his strict integrity, and he was often sought for official posts. In 1883 he was elected to the City Council from the old First Ward, and in 1884-85 was returned to office by a large majority. In 1886 he was elected alderman from the First Ward, and served in that capacity for four terms. In 1896, Mr. Brockway was appointed by Mayor Stiles B. Preston a member of the Water Commission, on which he served for six consecutive years. He was greatly interested in the cause of education, and because of his interest in the work of furthering educational opportunities in the city of Hartford, he was elected a member of the committee of the Second North School District, on which he served for a number of years, rendering services of a very valuable nature. He was especially interested in the Henry Barnard School of the Second North School District, and did much to better conditions there. Mr. Brockway was a member of the Farmington Avenue Congregational Church, and during the long period of his membership devoted much of his time to its work, and gave liberally, but without ostentation, to its philanthropies.

Mr. Brockway married, Nov. 17, 1880, Harriet E. Norton, daughter of Seth Porter and Elizabeth Esther (Wilcox) Norton, members of the old Norton family of Collinsville, Conn. (See Norton VI). Mrs. Brockway survives her husband, and resides at No. 136 Sigourney street, Hartford, Conn. They were the parents of the following children: 1. Elizabeth Norton, born Feb. 12, 1882, died Nov. 9, 1907; she was a graduate of Hartford High School, class of 1899; a graduate of Smith College, 1903; secretary of Second North School; member of Smith College Club, and of the Daughters of the American Revolution. 2. Ulysses Hayden, Jr., born July 19, 1890. In January, 1907, he entered Yale University and was graduated from that institution in 1911, with the degree of Bachelor of Arts; during his freshman year at Yale he was a member of the Apollo Glee Club, retaining his membership for three years; for a like period he sang in the college choir. He is a member of the Delta Kappa Upsilon Fraternity, the University Club, the Hart-



Ulysses Hayden Brockway



## BROCKWAY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ford Golf Club, and numerous other societies. After his graduation from Yale University, Mr. Brockway entered the employ of the Travellers' Insurance Company of Hartford and was connected with the actuary department until his enlistment in the United States army in October, 1917. He was called for active service on October 15, 1917, and shortly afterward commissioned 2d lieutenant in the Adjutant-General's Department. He has since been promoted to the rank of captain.

Mr. Brockway's death meant to Hartford not only the loss of a valuable public official, but a true friend. Expressions of grief at his death were wide-spread, and from the various resolutions passed by official bodies and articles inserted in the public press a discriminating choice is difficult. The following resolution passed by the Second North School District, at its meeting on July 9, 1914, will perhaps give an adequate conception of what he meant in Hartford as a public officer and a friend of the people:

The Second North School District recognizes in the death of Mr. Ulysses H. Brockway, for twenty-two years a member of the District Committee, the loss of a devoted servant of the interests of the District. A warm friend of the teachers and pupils and an example of upright, consistent and unobtrusive citizenship, which has been of distinct value to the youth of the District and community. During his long term of service for the District he was a faithful conservator of its best interests, a wise counselor and a self-sacrificing official. His loss will be keenly felt by his associates upon the committee, by the teachers of the school and by his many friends in the District and in the community which he has well served by his quiet, unassuming, but effective life.

(Signed) FRANK R. KELLOGG,  
JAMES P. BERRY,  
SOLOMON MALLEY,  
District Committee.

(The Norton Line.)

The following is a description of the coat-of-arms of the Norton family, quartering St. Lo, Russell, De la Riviere, etc., etc.:

*Arms*—Quarterly of eleven. In chief: 1. Argent, on a bend sable, between two lions rampant of the second, three escallops of the field. 2. Argent, vair azure. 3. Argent, a bend engrailed sable between two mullets counter-charged, all within a bordure engrailed of the second. 4. Argent, bordure sable, charged with ten bezants, martlet of the second.

In fess—1. Sable, chevron ermine between three pheons argent. 2. Argent, bend sable, three annulets of the field. 3. Sable, three goats passant argent. 4. Ermine, cross engrailed gules.

In base—1. Argent, manche gules. 2. Gules, saltire or between four leopards' faces argent. 3. Azure two bars dansette or.

*Crest*—On a torse of the colors, greyhound couped or, collared per fess gules between two barrulets of the second.

*Mantle*—Sable and argent, the first veined or.

The history of the Norton family begins with the Norman Conquest, when on Sept. 29, 1066, the Seigneur de Norville crossed the Channel to England in the army of William the Conqueror, a constable under the Norman French regime. The name Norville, from



which the English form Norton is derived, is of French origin and signifies "north village." After the residence of the family in England, the English form Norton, meaning also north village or town, was adopted. It is supposed that the Seigneur de Norville was the common ancestor of all families of the name in England, Ireland and America. Up to the year 1650 there were thirteen immigrants of the name in America, of whom authentic record exists. That branch of the family of which the late Seth Porter Norton, of Hartford, Conn., was a member, was descended from John Norton, who was in the Connecticut colony as early as 1646. Since the time of founding the family has been one of the most prominent of New England houses of historic lineage, and has furnished sons who have served with distinction in the various departments of our national life.

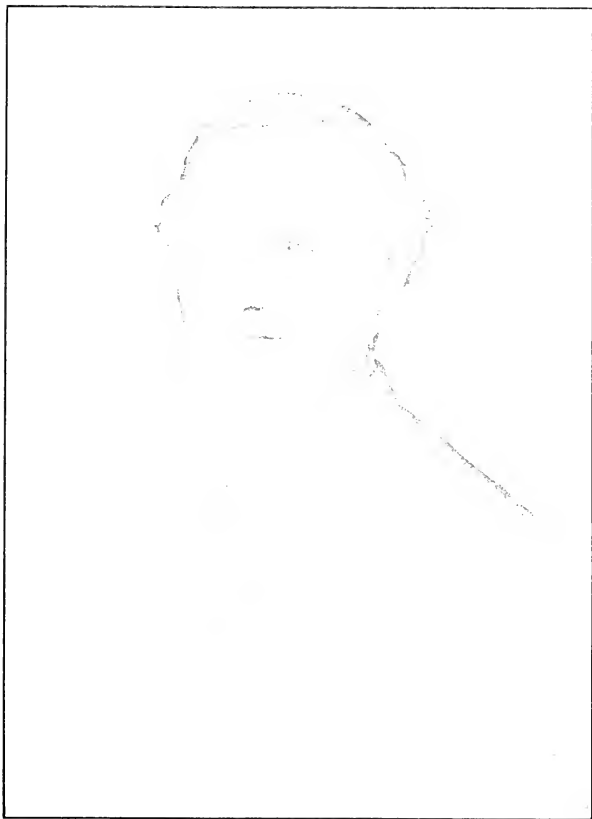
*I. John Norton*, immigrant ancestor, was born in England, probably at London, in 1622, third son of Richard and Ellen (Rowley) Norton. The date of his emigration to America is not known. His name is first mentioned on the records of the colony at Branford, on July 7, 1646. He was a landed proprietor there. In 1659 John Norton removed from Branford to Hartford, and on Sept. 29th of that year he made a purchase of several pieces of land and "housing." He was made a freeman at Hartford, May 21, 1664. John Norton was interested in the establishment of a colony at Tunxis, which later became Farmington, and was one of the proprietors of the town. He joined the church at Farmington in October, 1661. He was one of the largest land owners there, a man of considerable wealth according to the standards of the period. All of his extensive holdings in Farmington and the vicinity descended to his heirs. He married (first) Dorothy ———, who died in Branford, Jan. 24, 1652. His second wife, Elizabeth, died Nov. 6, 1657. He married (third) Elizabeth Clark, who died Nov. 8, 1702. He died in Farmington, Nov. 5, 1709.

*II. John (2) Norton*, son of John (1) and Dorothy Norton, was born in Branford, May 24, 1651, and died in Farmington, Conn., April 25, 1725. He was a man of considerable prominence in the early colony, and was deputy to the General Court from Farmington in 1680-81-82. He married, in Farmington, Ruth Moore, daughter of Isaac and Ruth (Stanley) Moore; she and their son Thomas were administrators of John Norton's estate.

*III. Thomas Norton*, son of John (2) and Ruth (Moore) Norton, was born in Farmington, Conn., on July 1, 1697, and died there in 1760. He was the owner of a great amount of property in the vicinity of Farmington, and was one of the original proprietors of Salisbury, Connecticut. In the division of public lands in April, 1739, he drew lot No. 24. In 1748 he purchased much land from Thomas Lamb. Thomas Norton married (first) on Nov. 17, 1724, Elizabeth







Seth Harter Norton



McIan of Stratford, who died in Farmington in 1736. He married (second) in 1739, Widow Rachel Pomeroy; (third) Sept. 11, 1753, Elizabeth Deming.

*IV. Ichabod Norton*, son of Thomas and Elizabeth (McIan) Norton, was born in Farmington, Conn., in 1736, and became one of the most distinguished members of the Norton family. He is a notable figure in the revolutionary annals of the State of Connecticut, having served as a colonel in the Continental forces and rendered most valuable services to the country. Colonel Ichabod Norton married Ruth Strong, who also gained distinction for bravery during the war.

*V. George Norton*, son of Col. Ichabod and Ruth (Strong) Norton, was born in Farmington, Conn., in November, 1782, and during the early part of his life lived in Farmington, where he became a prosperous farmer and leading citizen. In 1800 he removed to Granby and later to Avon, where he died on May 11, 1833. He married Eliza Frisbie, a member of one of the old families of Farmington.

*VI. Seth Porter Norton*, son of George and Eliza (Frisbie) Norton, was born May 16, 1823, at Avon, Conn., where he resided during his childhood. He received his early education in the public schools of the nearby town, Collinsville, a manufacturing town which offered the best educational opportunities to be found in the neighborhood. However, as is found to be a common occurrence in the lives of successful men of the last generation, he left school at an early age, and went into the largest of the manufacturing plants in the town, the Collins Company, makers of plows, axes, and other agricultural implements. His first employment in the company was of an unimportant nature. He was a man not only of keen business foresight and clear perception, but possessed also an infinite capacity for details. He mastered every phase of the business in the various positions which he held with the firm, and was gradually advanced as he became of greater value to the company. He eventually became superintendent of the Collins Company, a position which involved a very large and trying responsibility. Mr. Norton's energy was given unreservedly to his work, and throughout the years of his connection with the Collins Company he was regarded as a man of the strictest integrity and reliability in business dealings. His fairness and justice were proverbial. As a consequence men trusted him and his friends were legion.

Seth Porter Norton achieved a success in the business world which was entirely the result of his own efforts, and through that fact appealed as a friend and advisor to the vast army of men who owe their success to unremitting labor and indomitable purpose, rather than to brilliant and exceptional strokes of genius. He was deeply interested in politics and held various public offices. Mr. Norton represented Collinsville in the Connecticut State Legislature for several terms.



## BROCKWAY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Seth Porter Norton was a gentleman of the old school and a true Christian, whose Christianity extended beyond the narrow bounds of one religious denomination. Though he was a lifelong member of the Congregational church, he was in strong sympathy with every religious faith, tolerant enough to see and adopt the good in each. As is usual with the man who has dealt with and managed all manner of men, broad tolerance and a sympathy with humanity were characteristic of Mr. Norton throughout life. He knew and understood, which was the secret of his attraction for men, and the reason for his numerous friends. Mr. Norton died at the age of forty-four years, a man well loved, honored and revered.

He married (first) Aurelia Humason, of New Britain, Conn., on December 23, 1845. She died Sept. 2, 1849. He married (second) on Jan. 1, 1851, Elizabeth Esther Wilcox, daughter of Averit and Sally (Tuller) Wilcox, and a member of an old and highly respected family of Simsbury. Child of the first marriage: Mary, deceased. Children of second marriage: 1. Charles Everett, deceased. 2. Harriet Elizabeth, married, Nov. 17, 1880, Ulysses H. Brockway, of Hartford. 3. William Averit, deceased. 4. George Wilcox, engaged in business in Philadelphia. 5. Charles Robinson, deceased.

(The Wilcox Line.)

*Arms*—Ermine a chief chequy, or and gules.

*Crest*—On a mount, a dove proper.

The Wilcox family is of Saxon origin and was seated at Bury St. Edmunds, County Suffolk, England, before the Norman Conquest. Sir John Dugdale, in the visitation of the County of Suffolk, mentioned fifteen generations of this family prior to the year 1600. This traces the lineage back to the year 1200, when the surname came into use as an inherited family name. Wilcox, variously spelled, dates back to an early period of English history. One "Wilcox or Wilcott" is recorded as furnishing three men-at-arms at the battle of Agincourt. Another of the name is on record as court physician to King Charles. The family is one of honor and renown in old England, several of its branches bearing arms. In America the name is found in the very beginnings of our Colonial history. The Wilcoxes were at Jamestown, Virginia, as early as 1610, and at Cambridge, Massachusetts, as early as 1636.

The derivation of the surname is interesting. It is of that large class of English surnames which had their source in nicknames and sobriquets. It is a compound of "Will," meaning literally "the son of William," and the suffix "cock," a term of familiarity generally applied in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries to one of a sharp or forward nature. The sobriquet was of such a character that it adhered to its bearer throughout life, and was transmitted to



succeeding generations. Thus we have the surnames, Wilcox, Jeffcock, Hancock, etc.

The family in America has figured prominently in New England life and affairs since the middle of the seventeenth century. William Wilcox, immigrant ancestor and progenitor of the family herein under consideration, was the first of the name to establish himself in New England. His descendants are found largely in Massachusetts and Connecticut. Others of the name followed him and became the founders of flourishing and influential families.

*I. William Wilcox*, the founder, was born in the year 1601, at St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, and came to this country in 1636, a passenger in the ship "Planter," bringing with him a certificate of conformity to the doctrines of the Church of England, signed by the minister of St. Albans. He was thirty-four years old at the time of his arrival. He settled in Massachusetts, where he was admitted a freeman Dec. 7, 1636. William Wilcox was a linen weaver by trade. He removed in 1639 to Stratford, Conn., where he subsequently rose to prominence in public affairs. In 1647 he was deputy to the General Court at Hartford. He died in 1652, aged fifty-one years. His wife, Margaret Wilcox, was born in England, in 1611, and accompanied him to America. They were the parents of several children, among them Samuel, mentioned below.

*II. Samuel Wilcox*, son of William and Margaret Wilcox, was born about 1636. He accompanied his parents to Stratford, but on attaining his majority married and settled in Windsor, Conn., where he was prominent in local affairs until his death. His home was in that part of Windsor which is now Simsbury, where he had a grant of land. Samuel Wilcox was sergeant of the Windsor military company. He married Hannah ———; they were the parents of three children of actual record, but there were doubtless others.

*III. Deacon William (2) Wilcox*, son of Samuel and Hannah Wilcox, was born in Connecticut, about 1670. He was a lifelong resident of Simsbury, where he was the owner of considerable property. He married, Jan. 18, 1699, Elizabeth Wilson, daughter of Samuel and Mary (Griffin) Wilson, of Simsbury. They were the parents of Deacon William Wilcox, mentioned below.

*IV. Deacon William (3) Wilcox*, son of Deacon William (2) and Elizabeth (Wilson) Wilcox, was born in Simsbury, Conn., April 22, 1702, and died there Dec. 27, 1772. Like his father, he was a leader in religious activities, and one of the foremost citizens of the town. He married, May 2, 1723, Thanks Adams, who was probably a daughter of Daniel and Mary Adams of Simsbury.

*V. Lieutenant William (4) Wilcox*, son of Deacon William (3) and Thanks (Adams) Wilcox, was born April 1, 1728, in Simsbury, Conn., and settled about 1750 in West Simsbury, where he died in 1775. He was among the minute-men who marched from Simsbury





## BROCKWAY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

on the Lexington Alarm, April 19, 1775. He married Lucy Case, born Oct. 17, 1732, died in 1805, daughter of John (3) and Abigail (Humphrey) Case, granddaughter of John (2) and great-granddaughter of John (1) Case, founder of the family.

*VI. Daniel Wilcox*, son of Lieut. William (4) and Lucy (Case) Wilcox, was born in West Simsbury, March 25, 1772, and died in 1833, in Weatogue, where he spent his latter years. He married Esther Merritt, who was born March 8, 1771, died Nov. 10, 1860, at Weatogue. She was a daughter of James and Hannah (Phelps) Merritt, the latter a daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Watson) Phelps, of the ancient Windsor family of that name. Daniel and Esther Wilcox were parents of ten sons and one daughter.

*VII. Averit Wilcox*, son of Daniel and Esther (Merritt) Wilcox, was born Jan. 25, 1793, and was a prosperous farmer of Simsbury, where he died Jan. 26, 1866. He married, August 21, 1821, Sally Tuller, who was born Feb. 10, 1799, in Simsbury, daughter of Elisha and Elizabeth (Case) Tuller.

*VIII. Elizabeth Esther Wilcox*, daughter of Averit and Sally (Tuller) Wilcox, was born in Simsbury, Conn. She married, Jan. 1, 1851, Seth Porter Norton, of Collinsville, Connecticut, and they were the parents of Harriet Elizabeth Norton. (See Norton VI).





Charles R. Beal



## Belden and Allied Families

*Arms*—Argent, a fesse between three fleurs-de-lis, sable.

*Motto*—*Deo Duce* (God my Leader).



THE following excerpt is taken from a letter written by William Paley Baildon, F. S. A., member of the Council of the Archaeological Society of Yorkshire, England, and concerns the origin of the Belden family. "There is only one family of Baildon; all persons bearing that name by inheritance must have sprung from the Yorkshire manor of that name. Richard Bayldon, son of Sir Francis Bayldon, of Kippax, baptized May 26, 1591, was the only Richard, so far as I know, would have had money to spend in the purchase of lands as Richard of Wethersfield did."

The ancestral seat of the Bayldon family, as the English house from which the American Beldens sprung spell the name, was the manor of Baildon, in Kippax, Yorkshire, England, and the family was one of great antiquity, worth and importance. The pedigree of the Baidons of Kippax Manor extends from the end of the fifteenth century, through five generations to the American immigrant, as follows: *I. Walter Baildon*, founder of the family. *II. John Baildon*, son and heir of Walter Baildon, died December 22, 1526. *III. George Baildon*, son of John Baildon, was born in 1520; he is mentioned in the records of Methby in 1567, and is recorded in Hardwick, in 1574. He was buried at Kippax in Yorkshire, in 1588. *IV. Sir Francis Baildon*, son of George Baildon, was born at Kippax, Yorkshire, in 1560, and upon the death of his father, in 1588, became Reeve of Kippax. He was knighted on July 23, 1603. *V. Richard Baildon*, son of Sir Francis Baildon, was born at Kippax, and baptized there on May 26, 1591. He settled in the New England Colonies toward the middle of the seventeenth century. His descendants have consistently adhered to the spelling Belden; some branches use the form Belding.

(The Family in America.)

*I. Richard Belden*, immigrant ancestor and progenitor of the American Beldens, was born in Kippax, Yorkshire, England, about the year 1591, the son of Sir Francis Baildon. He was baptized May 26, 1591, according to a document which he signed on March 26, 1613, as Richard Baylden, aged "19 years of age, born at Kippax,



county Yorkshire." This document was signed when he took the oath of allegiance as a soldier of the King. He emigrated to America and settled in Wethersfield, Connecticut, where he became the owner of eight pieces of property, according to the town records, some of which the town gave him, and some of which he purchased from "Jonas Woode." During his lifetime he accumulated considerable real estate, which he left to his children, and laid the foundation of wealth for his progeny. His descendants have been marked for a keen business and commercial genius, sterling morals and intellectual force. His home lot was on the corner of Broad street and "The Waye leading into the Great playne." This piece of land remained in the family for four generations, and was sold in 1742 by the great-grandson of Richard Belden, Silas Belden. He held several town offices, and was prominent in local affairs. He died in 1655, and the inventory of his estate proved him to be a wealthy man according to the standards of the day. Richard Belden was beyond doubt representative of the highest type of cultivated Englishman who came to the New World. He brought with him to America his three sons: William, born about 1622; Samuel, born about 1629; John, mentioned below.

*II. John Belden*, son of Richard Belden, was born in England about 1631, and accompanied his father to America, settling in Wethersfield, where he was made a freeman in 1657. He enlisted as a trooper under Captain John Mason during the years 1657-58, and took an active part in the affairs of the town. He inherited a large portion of the real estate of his father, and acquired much of his own by purchase, building a moderate fortune. He was licensed to be a tavern keeper by the town, and in all probability was a merchant. The inventory of his estate amounted to £911. He died June 27, 1677, aged forty-six years. The Wethersfield Land Records, pages 225-258, bear his autograph, "John Belden." John Belden married Lydia Standish, daughter of Thomas and Susanna Standish. Their children were: 1. John, born June 12, 1658. 2. Lieut. Jonathan, June 21, 1660. 3. Joseph, April 23, 1663. 4. Samuel, mentioned below. 5. Sarah, March 31, 1668. 6. Daniel, Oct. 12, 1670. 7. Child, Jan. 8, 1672. 8. Lydia, in March, 1675, married Stephen Kellogg. 9. Margaret, March 29, 1677.

*III. Samuel Belden*, son of John and Lydia (Standish) Belden, was born at Wethersfield, Conn., in 1665, and is supposed to have removed to New London, and to have been the progenitor of the New London Beldens. He married, Jan. 14, 1685, Hannah Hardy, daughter of Richard Hardy, and granddaughter of John Elderkin, one of the pioneer settlers of Norwich, Conn.; she died Jan. 20, 1741-42. He died Dec. 27, 1738. The inventory of his estate, taken Jan. 25, 1739, placed his estate at £381 16s. 1 d. The children of Samuel and Hannah (Hardy) Belden, born in Wethersfield, were: 1. A





daughter, died in 1688. 2. Samuel, mentioned below. 3. Daniel, born Feb. 14, 1690-91. 4. Gideon, March 24, 1692-93. 5. Prudence, Feb. 12, 1694. 6. Eunice, April 14, 1696, died Dec. 26, 1797. 7. Richard, April 18, 1699. 8. Matthew, June 13, 1701. 9. Hannah, Sept. 25, 1704.

*II. Samuel (2) Belden*, son of Sammel (1) and Hannah (Hardy) Belden, was born in Wethersfield, Conn., in 1689. He married (first) April 10, 1712, Mary Spenceer, of Haddam, Connecticut, who died Oct. 28, 1751, at the age of sixty years. His second wife died Feb. 23, 1775. Samuel Belden was prominent in official life in Wethersfield and owned a large amount of property in the town. He died July 31, 1771. Children: 1. Samuel, mentioned below. 2. Jared, born Jan. 19, 1714-15. 3. Nathaniel, born June 24, 1716. 4. Lydia, born May 24, 1718. 5. Asa, born April 1, 1720, died Feb. 16, 1800. 6. Mary, born Dec. 11, 1721. 7. Ann, born Nov. 7, 1723. 8. Seth, born Sept. 18, 1725. 9. Daniel, born May 19, 1727. 10. Richard, born Dec. 30, 1728. 11. Phinehas, born Sept. 14, 1730. 12. Dorothy, born Sept. 6, 1732. 13. Esther, born June 22, 1734. 14. Martha, born June, 1736, died Oct. 9, 1751.

*V. Samuel (3) Belden*, son of Samuel (2) and Mary (Spencer) Belden, was born in Wethersfield, Conn., in 1713. He later removed to Stepney, Conn., where he was a prosperous farmer and well known citizen. He married Elizabeth ———, who died Feb. 23, 1775. He died Jan. 10, 1789. Children: 1. Prudence, born July 12, 1742. 2. Abner, born Jan. 12, 1744; married, Oct. 24, 1771, Mary Standish. 3. Bildad, born August 7, 1746. 4. Seth, mentioned below. 5. Moses, born June 18, 1749, died August 16, 1750. 6. Rebecca, born March 27, 1751; married Daniel Woodruff, of Farmington, Conn. 7. Mary, born Jan. 3, 1753.

*VI. Seth Belden*, son of Samuel (3) and Elizabeth Belden, was born in 1747. He was a soldier in the American Revolution, enlisting from Wethersfield, in November, 1775, as a private in Capt. Ozias Bissel's company, Col. Huntington's regiment. Seth Belden was killed in the battle of Long Island, August 27, 1776. No further record of his life exists, beyond that of his marriages. He married (first) Sally ———; (second) Christian Dickinson, who survived him and died in 1836, aged eighty years. She received a pension from the government. Seth and Christian (Dickinson) Belden were the parents of several children.

*VII. Seth (2) Belden*, son of Seth (1) and Christian (Dickinson) Belden, was a resident of Cromwell, Conn., and was there engaged in business as a shoemaker. He was active in religious interests in Cromwell, and was a member of the Congregational church. He married Sarah Smith. Children: 1. Sally, born May 10, 1801. 2. Child, died in infancy. 3. Louisa, born Jan. 15, 1804. 4. Lucy, born Jan. 15, 1804. 5. Harriet Sage, married a Mr. Bullard, and lived in



Middletown, Conn. 6. Emeline, married Ezra Sage. 7. Henry, a resident of Hartford, married Hannah Witherall. 8. Seth, mentioned below.

*VIII. Seth (3) Belden*, son of Seth (2) and Sarah (Smith) Belden, was born in what is now the town of Cromwell, Conn., May 8, 1812. In 1828, at the age of sixteen years, he went to Hartford, and there learned the trade of stone-cutter, in which he engaged for the remainder of his life. He later became a dealer in the stone business, ranking as one of the foremost business men and citizens of the city of Hartford. The business, first conducted under the name of Seth Belden, later became Seth Belden & Son.

Mr. Belden was a Democrat in political conviction, and was a well known figure in official life in Hartford, in the second half of the century just closed. He was many times a member of the Common Council, and at various times held other city offices. He was a man of strong convictions, of great integrity and unimpeachable honesty. In religious faith he was a Universalist.

Seth Belden married, May 15, 1834, Abigail Sophia Stedman, daughter of Nathan and Belinda (Stebbens) Stedman, born in Englishtown, N. J., June 21, 1816, and died in Hartford, March 20, 1853. Seth Belden died Sept. 28, 1896. Children: 1. Sarah Sophia, born 1835, died Jan. 31, 1852. 2. James Stedman, mentioned below. 3. Adeline Russell, born Sept. 9, 1843; married Charles Frederick Sedgwick, and is now living on the old homestead. 4. Charles Rockwell, mentioned below. 5. Alfred Burr, married (second) Elizabeth Corning, of Hartford, and had one child, Alfred Seth Belden, now a resident of New York City.

*IX. James Stedman Belden*, son of Seth (3) and Abigail Sophia (Stedman) Belden, was born in Hartford, Conn., July 25, 1840. He was educated in the schools of the city. After finishing his education he entered his father's business, and upon attaining his majority was admitted as a partner, the firm then becoming Seth Belden & Son. The firm was one of the best known and largest of its kind in Hartford, and in addition to operating quarries in Bolton and Glastonbury, also engaged in cement and sidewalk building. At the death of his father, James Stedman Belden became head of the firm and remained so until his death. He was an ardent Democrat, and was active in the political life of the city of Hartford, serving as councilman from the Third Ward in 1866-67-68. He was a member of the Hartford Business Men's Association. James S. Belden died in Hartford, Conn., in December, 1914. He is survived by his wife, and three daughters—Sophia, Elizabeth, and Mrs. James H. Morgan (née Adeline Sedgwick Belden).

*IX. Charles Rockwell Belden*, son of Seth (3) and Abigail Sophia (Stedman) Belden, was born in Hartford, Conn., Jan. 24, 1850. He received his early education in the public schools of the city, and



## BELDEN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

after completing his studies engaged for a period in the tailoring business, leaving it, however, after a short time to enter the business which his father had established in Hartford. He studied the business in all its departments, and was an active factor in its affairs during the two years he was connected with the firm. He resigned from Seth Belden & Son in 1882, and in the same year founded the Hartford Coal Company. The venture was very successful from the outset and developed to a great size. Shortly afterward Mr. Belden was elected to the office of president and treasurer, and acted in that capacity until the time of his death.

Mr. Belden was a man of conspicuous business genius, and possessed a talent for organization and management which won him a place of unusual prominence in the business and financial circles of Hartford. He was generally recognized as a man whose lead might be followed with the greatest safety and advantage. He was a quick and sure judge of men, and had the qualities of the born leader, appealing to men not through the authority which was his if he chose to use it, but through the power of reason. He was keenly interested in the local and national issues of politics, and was a staunch Republican, though not bound to the principles of his party against his better judgment. He was a member of the Common Council of Hartford during the term of 1875, being elected from the Third Ward. Charles Rockwell Belden was a prominent factor in the club and fraternal life of the city and was a member of the following organizations: St. John's Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons, of Hartford; the B. H. Webb Council, Royal Arcanum; the Hartford Council, Improved Order of Heptasophis, and the Sicaogg Tribe, Improved Order of Red Men.

He married, May 28, 1868, Mary Elizabeth Sill, daughter of Micah (2) and Adelaide (Raphael-Baker) Sill, of Hartford. (See Sill VIII).

*Raphael Arms*—Azure, three crosses potent argent.

*Crest*—A ducal coronet of five leaves or.

The children of Mr. and Mrs. Belden were: 1. Frederick Seth, who succeeded his father as president and treasurer of the Hartford Coal Company; married Sidney Hanson; children: Kathleen and Ruth. 2. Caroline Sill, married James E. Brooks, of Orange, N. J.; children: Charles and Eleanor. 3. Louise, married William C. Hill, of Sunbury, Penn.

Mrs. Belden survives her husband, and resides at No. 905 Asylum avenue, Hartford. Charles Rockwell Belden died in Hartford, March 18, 1902.

(The Sill Line.)

*Arms*—Argent a fesse engrailed sable fretty or, in chief a lion passant gules.

*Crest*—A demi-griffin proper collared argent.



The branch of the Sill family of which Mrs. Charles R. Belden is a descendant, comprises the progeny of John Sill, the first of the English house to emigrate to America, where in 1637 he settled at "Newtowne," now Cambridge, Massachusetts.

*I. John Sill*, progenitor of the family in America, was born in England, and came to America in 1637, arriving in the Massachusetts Colony between the months of June and December. He brought with him his wife Joanna, and his children—Joseph, born in 1636, and Elizabeth, born in 1637, both of whom were baptized in England. He settled in Cambridge, and was admitted a freeman there on May 2, 1638. During 1638 he and his wife were admitted members of the Congregational Society of Cambridge. In 1638 he bought a house and lot at the southeast corner of Eliot and Winthrop streets. It is probable that sickness and the expense of the voyage from England somewhat reduced his resources, for the church records speak of his receiving a "bottell of sack." He was also indebted to one of the members of the Council, and was assisted in discharging his debt by one of the magistrates of the town, which fact would indicate that he held a position of prominence in local affairs. He retrieved his fortunes, however, and in 1642 was the owner of four and a half acres of land, in addition to his house and lot, and in 1645 received a grant of four acres more. In 1647 he is mentioned as one of the creditors of an estate, and under date of Feb. 23, 1648-49, as one of the proprietors of land in Cambridge. He died somewhat prior to 1652. His widow, Joanna Sill, survived him for twenty years, and among the allotments of land made on June 9, 1652, received lot No. 66, containing forty acres of land in Cambridge, situated not far from the center of the town. On August 27, 1653, she was granted power to recover certain debts due one Susann Blaciston, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, in England. The will of Joanna Sill was presented for probate in October, 1671.

*II. Joseph Sill*, son of John and Joanna Sill, was born in England, in 1636, and came to America with his parents the year following his birth. He married (first) Dec. 5, 1660, Jemima Belcher, daughter of Andrew Belcher, of Cambridge. She was a niece of Lieutenant-Governor Thomas Danforth, and aunt to Governor Jonathan Belcher, of Massachusetts. Jemima (Belcher) Sill died in Cambridge, Mass., about the year 1675. Joseph Sill married (second) Mrs. Sarah Marvin, daughter of George Clark, of Milford, Conn., Feb. 12, 1677.

During his residence in Cambridge, Joseph Sill signed a petition drawn up by the freeman of that town, asking the General Court to continue the liberties and privileges of the charter of King James and King Charles I. In 1665 he was the owner of ten acres of land in Cambridge, and later acquired twenty more. Joseph Sill was a lieutenant in the local militia at the outbreak of King Philip's War





in 1675, and on Sept. 24th of that year was commissioned a captain of one hundred men under Major Pyncheon. He saw service throughout New England during the war, and is mentioned in Hubbard's history of the conflict as having engaged against the Indians in several expeditions on the Merrimac river, Casco bay and Ossipee river in New Hampshire. Savage speaks of him as "the famous Captain Joseph Sill." At the close of the war he left Cambridge and went to Lyme, Connecticut, where he purchased land lying north of Mill brook, at a place called Grassy Hill. Here he settled and followed agricultural pursuits during the remainder of his life. He died August 6, 1696, and his wife died on Feb. 17, 1715. There is to be found in the Massachusetts Archives, vol. 70, page 148, a letter written by Captain Joseph Sill in November, 1685, to the General Court of Massachusetts, at Boston. During his residence in Lyme he became one of the most prominent men of the colony. He was elected deputy to the General Court of Connecticut three times, in 1686-90-91. On May 12, 1692, he was appointed by the court, captain of the Train Band of Lyme, and held that position until the time of his death.

*III. Joseph (2) Sill*, son of Joseph (1) and Sarah (Clark-Marvin) Sill, was born Jan. 6, 1678, at Lyme, Conn., and died there, Nov. 10, 1765. He was a farmer by occupation, and inherited the land first settled by his father. In 1716, with his brother Zachariah, he purchased land in the vicinity of this farm, about a mile and a half from the center of Lyme village. Here both settled with their families. This part of Lyme became known as "Silltown." In 1730 Joseph Sill purchased land in the North Parish of Lyme from Eben Mack, £300, which he deeded in 1746 to his son Jabez. The old family homestead he deeded in 1730 to his son John. Joseph Sill was a member of the Congregational Society. He married, about 1704, Phoebe Lord, daughter of Lieut. Richard Lord, of Lyme, born in 1686, and died Jan. 4, 1772, aged eighty-six years.

*IV. Thomas Sill*, son of Joseph (2) and Phoebe (Lord) Sill, was born in Lyme, Conn., on August 25, 1717, and died there in 1760. He was a farmer, and lived on the estate "Grassy Hill," inherited from his father. He married Jemima Dudley, of Saybrook, Conn., May 6, 1742. She was the daughter of Lieut. Joseph and Sarah (Pratt) Dudley, born May 20, 1720, and died in 1814.

*V. Micah Sill*, son of Thomas and Jemima (Dudley) Sill, was born at Lyme, Conn., Dec. 25, 1751, and died there Dec. 10, 1786. He passed his entire life on his farm in Lyme. At the Lexington Alarm in April, 1775, he enlisted with his three brothers, as a patriot, in the Connecticut forces, and marched to Roxbury, Mass., to the relief of Boston. He was a member of Captain Joseph Jowett's company, of the 6th Continentals, Col. Parsons commanding. Micah Sill was later known as Major Sill, probably from his rank in the



State Militia. He married Azubah Harvey, of North Lyme, in 1774.

*VI. Thomas (2) Sill*, son of Micah and Azubah (Harvey) Sill, was born in Lyme, Conn., Oct. 1, 1776, and died at Middletown, Conn., Jan. 29, 1826. He learned the trade of cabinetmaker, and owned a large factory at Middletown, where he employed as many as one hundred men. He was a lieutenant in the 1st Light Infantry, 23rd Regiment, Connecticut Militia, and his commission bears the date, Nov. 1, 1809. He became a member of the General Society of Mechanics, Jan. 4, 1814. On August 2, 1800, Thomas Sill married Clarissa Treadway, daughter of Amos and Elizabeth (Blake) Treadway, who was born at Middletown, Dec. 31, 1775, and died Dec. 22, 1860, aged eighty-four years.

*VII. Micah (2) Sill*, son of Thomas (2) and Clarissa (Treadway) Sill, was born in Middletown, Conn., May 8, 1803, and died March 22, 1859. He was a watchmaker by trade, and owned a jewelry shop in New York City for several years, in partnership with his brother, Frederick Sill. He married (first) Susan Casey Starr, of Middletown, Conn., on Oct. 29, 1826. He married (second) Mrs. Adelaide (Raphael) Baker, of Hartford, Conn., on June 11, 1847. After his second marriage he went to live in Wethersfield, on his wife's farm, which he increased in size by the addition of adjoining lots. His second wife died Jan. 16, 1858. Micah Sill was a member of the State Militia, in which he held the rank of major. The children of his second marriage were: 1. Mary Elizabeth, mentioned below. 2. Adelaide Josephine, born Sept. 1, 1849; married Charles C. Tomlinson, of Hartford, Conn., May 7, 1873.

*VIII. Mary Elizabeth Sill*, first daughter of Micah (2) and Adelaide (Raphael-Baker) Sill, married Charles Rockwell Belden, of Hartford, Conn. (See Belden IX).





## McClary and Allied Families

*Arms*—Or, a chevron azure, between three roses gules.



HERE is a duty which every American owes the land which gives him his opportunity and fortune, a duty which, unless embellished and ornamented by unusual inducements, it is the custom of the average citizen to overlook.

On every hand one finds men whose talents and inclinations fit them preëminently for public service, but who shun this duty of patriotism because of the greater benefits, pecuniary and of other natures, which accrue to them from the field of business. The country has its statesmen, but it needs in the ranks of its servants and advisors the trained and analytical mind of the business man to solve the problems which face the Nation to-day, the problems within its own borders. The talents of the ordinary business men do not run to unravelling the intricacies of international law, but rather do they apply to and excel in the management of questions of commerce, labor, reform, etc., which agitate the public to-day. For men so endowed to reject office and government service because of selfish reasons is a blot upon their citizenship. No man can truly uphold the ideals and standards of America, who, being capable, refuses the high honor of public service.

It may with truth and conviction be said that the late John McClary, of Hartford, Connecticut, did his duty to its full extent in the long years in which he faithfully served the Government of the United States, subserving every personal wish to its demands, because of a high standard of patriotism and honor which put country before self.

Mr. McClary was of Scotch parentage, the son of John and Ellen (Reilly) McClary, natives of the world-famed shipbuilding city of Glasgow, Scotland. The Scotch are among the most intensely patriotic people in the world, a people whose love of home and country is a fire unquenchable, as is amply attested by history. The allegiance which his parents brought to the land of their adoption was equally strong in their son, and was the moving factor in Mr. McClary's devotion to his service in the offices of the government, despite the fact that he was eminently fitted for success in a field of business which, when he finally entered it, comparatively late in life, proved lucrative and successful.

Shortly after their marriage, John McClary, Sr., came to America with his wife, settling in the city of Boston, where John McClary,



## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Jr., was born. When he was quite young his parents moved to Wakefield, Massachusetts. It was here that he received his early education, attending school until he reached the age of fifteen years. While young McClary was still in his thirteenth year, 1861, the Civil War broke out, sweeping the country like a fever, and drawing men to the colors in a burst of enthusiasm which, to put it tritely, was no respecter of age. Youth and age stood side by side eagerly awaiting the chance to serve their country. All the willingness and eagerness which he could muster did not stand Mr. McClary in the stead which additional years would have, and he found that enlistment was barred to him because of his age. Two years later, however, in 1863, he left school, and was admitted to the army as a member of the Signal Corps. From that time until the close of hostilities he saw active service with a branch of the army which is constantly exposed to greater danger than any other. To a man of spirit and courage, to live through the soul-stirring events of a great war is one of the greatest fortunes which can befall him. Mr. McClary came into close contact with many of the great events of those days, wonderful yet terrible, and was one of the audience in the Ford Theatre in Washington, on the fateful night when John Wilkes Booth assassinated Abraham Lincoln, the genius who had safely guided the country through the storms of Civil War. Mr. McClary did not give up his position in the Signal Service at the end of the war, but retired for a period, and returning North, went to live with his sister, Mrs. Mary Wetherby, in Springfield, Massachusetts, living with her for a number of years.

During his residence in Springfield, he became associated with Colonel Bartholomew and James L. Thompson in the American Express Company, with whom he was connected for several years. Shortly after his marriage, Mr. McClary again entered the Signal Service and went West with his wife. The work to which he was then assigned was in connection with the Weather Bureau, and involved considerable sacrifice of personal wishes and inclinations, because of the fact that they had constantly to be moving from one section of the country to another. They have resided all over the United States. Mr. McClary's last post was in California, where he was stationed about 1890. In 1891 he gave up active service and returned to the East, making his home in Hartford, Connecticut. Here he bought out a woodworking factory, and from that time until his death devoted himself to his business interests. In this enterprise he attained a high degree of success, and became known as one of the substantially successful business men of the city of Hartford, despite the fact that he had entered the field of business at a time of life when the majority of men are fairly established in it.

Mr. McClary was keenly interested in the political issues of the times, as an observer, and as a member of the body politic, but he





Don McHenry



Jennie Carter McChesney



Books of H. J. H. Co.



## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

never entered the political field as a candidate for public office. He was very active in the social and club life of Hartford from the time of his first residence in the city, and was a member whose presence was counted upon and whose voice was reckoned with in the council of many important and influential organizations in the city. He was a member of the Grand Army of the Republic, the Army and Navy clubs. He had attained the thirty-second degree in the Masonic order, and was a member of Washington Commandery, Knights Templar, and also of the Mecca Temple, Mystic Shrine.

On September 28, 1868, while a resident in the home of his sister in Springfield, Massachusetts, Mr. McClary married Jennie Cutler, of Boston, a daughter of Nathan Moore and Columbia (Shearer) Cutler, of that city. Mr. Cutler was a native of Farmington, Maine, where his father had established himself. The genealogy of the Cutler family, of which Mrs. McClary is a descendant in the eighth generation, is given at length in the following pages. Mrs. McClary's grandmother was Sarah (King) Shearer, a daughter of Jesse King of Palmer, Massachusetts, of an early and prominent family in that neighborhood. Jesse King married Mary Graham, a daughter of Rev. Mr. Graham, of Pelham, Massachusetts. Both Mrs. McClary's parents died when she was very young, and she was brought up by her aunt, Mrs. A. V. Blanchard, of Palmer, Massachusetts. She resides in the beautiful McClary home at No. 56 Highland avenue, Hartford, where all her dearest associations are centered. She is deeply interested in charitable and philanthropic work, to which her late husband devoted a large portion of his time. She is active in community welfare work and takes an unusual interest in the current topics of the day. Mrs. McClary's home engendered a charm of good feeling and hospitality which is felt alike by the oldest friend and the most casual visitor to it. Mr. and Mrs. McClary had no children. They were members of Christ Episcopal Church in Hartford, in the parochial interests of which she is still a figure of importance.

Mr. McClary died on July 7, 1909, and in his death Hartford lost a man who meant much to its interests, a man whose place was a truly enviable one in the commercial life of the city, in its social life, and in the estimation of scores of friends, whose opinion of him is adequately expressed in the famous "Take him for all in all, we shall not look upon his like again."

(The Cutler Line.)

*Arms*—Or, three bendlets sable; over all a lion rampant gules.

*Crest*—A demi-lion rampant gules holding in his paws a battleaxe or.

The name Cutler is of that class of patronymics which were derived from the trades or occupations of their original forebears. Others of this class are Cooper, Smith, Miller, Gardner, Fuller, etc. When the adoption of surnames became prevalent, the first member





of the Cutler family to adopt the name was in all probability a cutler name was in all probability a cutler by trade, a maker of knives or other cutting instruments.

The English progenitor to which the American family traces its lineage was Admiral Sir Gervase Cutler, who was killed in 1645, in defence of the Castle of Pontificata. Sir Gervase Cutler was a son of Thomas Cutler, who was buried at Silkton, January 21, 1622. Thomas Cutler was a descendant of Sir John Cutler, standard bearer during the War of the Roses, who was knighted in the reign of Henry VI. Sir Gervase Cutler married for his first wife Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Bently. The children of this marriage were Margaret, who married Sir Edward Mosely; and a son Gervase, who died young. Sir Gervase Cutler married (second) Lady Magdalen, the ninth daughter of Sir John Egerton, Duke of Bridgewater, and of this marriage there were nine children. Cutlers have filled places of honor and importance in England for the past thousand years. The American Cutlers have figured notably in New England history for two and a half centuries.

The New England ancestors were James, Robert and John Cutler, who emigrated from the Mother Country to the American Colonies in 1634, settling in Massachusetts. James Cutler came to Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1634. The name of Robert Cutler first appears on the records of Charlestown, in 1636, where it is recorded that he was married. John Cutler, Sr., with a family, was settled at Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1637.

*I. James Cutler*, immigrant ancestor and founder, settled as early as 1634 at Watertown, Massachusetts, where the first record of the family name in New England, in America, in fact, is to be found. He was one of the original grantees of land in the northerly part of the town, on the road to Belmont. James Cutler had married in England Anna Grout, sister of Captain John Grout, and had espoused the cause of Puritanism, for which defection from the Established Church both he and his wife were so persecuted that they resolved to seek peace and religious freedom in New England, and accordingly came to America unaccompanied by friends or near relatives. There is no authentic record by which to fix the date of the arrival of James Cutler. His first child, James, was born "Ye 6th day, 9th month, 1635." He had that year passed all necessary probation and been received an inhabitant of Watertown, having a house lot assigned him. The lot contained eight acres, bounded on the east by the lot of Thomas Boylston, west and north by a highway, i. e., by Common street and Pond road, and south by the lot of Elias Barron. In the first "great divide," July 25, 1636, he was assigned twenty-five acres, and three acres in the further plain (now Waltham) next to the river. In 1642 he had assigned to him eighty-four acres in the fourth division, and four other farms. On October



2, 1645, he was one of the petitioners "in relation to Nashaway plantation, now Weston." On December 13, 1649, James Cutler and Nathaniel Bowman for £70 bought of Edward Goffe two hundred acres in Cambridge Farms. James Cutler sold his share of one hundred acres to Bowman for £39, on March 4, 1651. This land adjoined Rock Meadow and was near Waltham. About this time he settled at Cambridge Farms, now Lexington, on what is known as Wood street, and not far from the Concord (now Bedford) line, a part of which farm remained in the family until sold by the heirs of Leonard Cutler. James Cutler is supposed to have built one of the first houses at the Farms. Vestiges of the cellar of his house still remain. The house was located some thirty rods from the present highway, on an elevation commanding an extensive view. James Cutler died at Cambridge Farms, May 17, 1694, aged eighty-eight years. His will was dated November 24, 1684. James Cutler married (first) Anna ———, who was buried September 30, 1644. He married (second) March 9, 1645, Mary, widow of Thomas King, who died December 7, 1654. His third wife was Phoebe, daughter of John Page, whom he married in 1662.

*II. James (2) Cutler*, son of James (1) and Anna Cutler, was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, September 6, 1635. He was a farmer, residing at Cambridge Farms, near Concord line, and was a soldier in King Philip's War. He made his will on the 28th and died on the 31st of July, 1685. He married, June 15, 1665, Lydia (Moore) Wright, daughter of John Moore, of Sudbury, and widow of Samuel Wright; she died in Sudbury, November 23, 1723. (See Moore II).

*III. Thomas Cutler*, son of James (2) and Lydia (Moore-Wright) Cutler, was born December 16, 1677, at Cambridge Farms (now Lexington), where he resided the greater part of his life. He was constable in 1719, and selectman in 1729, 1731, 1733 and 1734. About 1750 he purchased of Noah Ashley a farm in Western, now Warren, and removed there. Thomas Cutler died December 23, 1759. He bequeathed to each of his daughters and granddaughters a cow, besides sums of money; to son David his silver-headed cane, half the service of his negro man, besides money and half his books and apparel; to his son Thomas half the service of his negro man, and his lands and buildings, and half his books and apparel, besides other things. His will discloses the fact that he was the owner of at least one slave.

Thomas Cutler married (first) Sarah, daughter of Samuel (3) and Dorcas (Jones) Stone, who joined the church in Lexington, July 4, 1708, and died January 10, 1750, aged sixty-nine years. (See Stone VIII). He married (second) Lydia Simonds, April 10, 1750, and with her was dismissed to the church at Western, May 17, 1752, having owned the covenant at Lexington, June 6, 1703.

*IV. David Cutler*, son of Thomas and Sarah (Stone) Cutler, was



born August 28, and baptized September 9, 1705, at Lexington. He joined the church in Lexington, April 14, 1728. He resided on the family homestead near the Bedford line. He was surveyor of the township during the reign of King George III; served as constable in Lexington in 1746, and as selectman in 1749-50-51. His will, dated September 13, 1758, mentions his wife Mary. He left personal property inventoried at \$573 15s. David Cutler died December 5, 1760, of small-pox, which was particularly fatal in those days because of the fact that there was no known way to combat its onslaughts. He married Mary Tidd, who survived him thirty-seven years, and died May 25, 1797, aged ninety-three years.

*V. Joseph Cutler*, son of David and Mary (Tidd) Cutler, was born at Lexington, Massachusetts, May 31, 1733, in the second house which was built on the Cutler farm. His residence in Warren was on the west side of the river, and it was here that he died, February 7, 1816, aged eighty-three years. He married (first) May 6, 1755, Rebecca, daughter of John and Esther (Prince) Hoar, of Lincoln, Massachusetts, born July, 1735, and died September 16, 1758. He married (second) Mary, sister of Major Reuben Reed, of Warren, Massachusetts, on September 20, 1759. She was born January 30, 1738, and died March 28, 1792.

*VI. Hon. Nathan Cutler, A. M.*, son of Joseph and Mary (Reed) Cutler, was born at Western, now Warren, Massachusetts, May 29, 1775, and died June 8, 1861. He was graduated from Dartmouth College in 1798, and was preceptor at Middlebury Academy for one year thereafter. He then studied law with Judge Chipman, of Vermont, and later at Worcester, Massachusetts, and in the last mentioned city he was admitted to the bar in 1801. For a time he practiced in his native town, but in 1803 removed to Farmington, Maine, where he resided for the remainder of his life. For about thirty-five years he was engaged in the active pursuit of his profession, and was deeply interested in the educational and political affairs of his town and State. He was several times a member of the Legislature of Massachusetts before its separation (1810-11-12-19-20). He was appointed judge of the Court of Common Pleas by Governor Berry in 1812, but declined to accept the office. In 1819, Hon. Nathan Cutler was a member of the convention that framed the Constitution of the State of Maine, and subsequently became active in public life and politics in Maine. He was many times a member of the Legislature of that State. Upon the death of Gov. Lincoln, early in the year 1829, by virtue of his office as president of the Senate, Hon. Nathan Cutler became governor of the State of Maine, and in 1829 he was one of the presidential electors. He was one of the incorporators of Framington Academy, and during his lifetime president of the board of trustees. Governor Cutler was much interested in classical studies, of which he was a life-long student, and he did much to inculcate a love of learning in his associates.



Neutra





## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

He married (first) Hannah, daughter of Isaac Moore, of Warren, Massachusetts, on September 10, 1804. She died February 20, 1835. Seven of the nine children of Governor and Mrs. Cutler grew to maturity. He married (second) in 1856, Harriet, widow of William Weld, and daughter of Colonel Easterbrooks, of Brunswick, Maine.

*VII. Nathan Moore Cutler*, son of Hon. Nathan and Hannah (Moore) Cutler, was born August 2, 1808. At the age of sixteen years he entered Philips Academy at Exeter, New Hampshire. After graduating from that institution he attended Bowdoin College, but was obliged to discontinue his studies on account of poor health. He then entered on a business career, first at Warren, Massachusetts, and later at Bangor, Maine. Under the administration of President Martin Van Buren, he held the office of debenture clerk in the Boston Customs House. The collector of the port at the time was George Bancroft. This position he held until the time of his death on October 30, 1849. He married, September 12, 1836, Columbia Shearer, of Palmer, Massachusetts, who died in Cambridge, Massachusetts. (See Shearer IV).

*VIII. Jennie Cutler*, daughter of Nathan Moore and Columbia (Shearer) Cutler, is of the eighth generation in direct descent from James Cutler, who settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, as early as 1634. She married John McClary, of Boston, Massachusetts, a sketch of whose life is appended hereto.

(The Moore Line.)

This name came into England with William the Conqueror in 1066. Thomas de More was among the survivors of the battle of Hastings, October 11, of that year, and was a recipient of many favors at the hands of the triumphant invaders. From the time of the Conquest to the period of American Colonial emigration, the family figured notably in Scotch and English history. Elizabeth More, daughter of Sir Adam More, became the wife of King Robert II., of Scotland, in 1347, and the ancestress of the long line of Stuart monarchs. Members of the family have been active in public, official and military life in the United Kingdom from time immemorial. In the time of James I. the Mores of Scotland were strict non-Conformists, consequently their removal in great numbers from Scotland into Ireland in 1612 is easily accounted for. Many espoused Quakerism, and this explains their predominance in the colony of William Penn. Bearing on its roll of membership such men as Sir John Moore and Tom Moore, the poet, the family has just reason to be proud of an honored ancestry. Someone has said that in tracing out a pedigree one is as likely to find a scaffold as a crown. Not so in the case of the Moores.

The American branches have been equally distinguished. The family had several unrelated progenitors, of whom the first to arrive



## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

was Richard Moore, who came in the "Mayflower" in 1620, landing at Plymouth, Massachusetts. The name is common to the earliest records of Plymouth, Newbury and Salem, the earliest settlements in the colony. John Moore, founder of one of the earliest of the Massachusetts families of the name, was a resident of Sudbury, Massachusetts, as early as 1642.

*I. John Moore*, immigrant ancestor and progenitor, was a native of England. The exact date of his coming to America is not known; he seems first to have settled in Sudbury, Massachusetts, however. He purchased a house and land there in 1642 of Edmund Rice. His property was located in what is now Wayland. He took the oath of fidelity on July 9, 1645. John Moore died January 6, 1673-74, and his will, dated August 25, 1668, was proved April 7, following his death. He married Elizabeth Whale, daughter of Philemon Whale; she was executrix of his will. Among their children was Lydia, mentioned below.

*II. Lydia Moore*, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Whale) Moore, was born in Sudbury, Massachusetts, June 24, 1643. She married (first) Samuel Wright. She married (second) June 15, 1665, James Cutler, Jr., of Cambridge Farms, Massachusetts. She died in Sudbury, November 23, 1723. (See Cutler II).

(The Stone Line.)

The origin of the surname Stone may be traced to the fact that early ancestors of the family lived near some remarkable roadside stone, and used the name as a means of identification when the necessity for surnames arose. Atte Stone, de la Stone, del Stone, and de Stone, are common to all medieval English registers. The court roll of the manors of Bovills and Piggotts, in Ardleigh, England, contains an entry in Latin, dated in the reign of Henry V., on the day of Mars next after the festival of the Holy Trinity, 1416, in which the names of persons living in the vicinity of these manors are mentioned, among them one "Willelmiate Stone" (William at the stone), who is referred to as being absent from a Court Baron, for which delinquency he, among others named, is fined. The Ardleigh Stones form the main line of which the American family of the name is a branch. The Massachusetts Stones, descendants of the founder, Gregory Stone, have figured prominently in the Colonial and State history of Massachusetts for two and a half centuries.

*I. Symond Stone*, earliest known ancestor of this branch of the Stone family, made a will, recorded in the parish records of Much Bromley, England, under date of May 12, 1506, and proved February 10, 1510. He bequeaths to his son Walter "my tenement in Ardleigh," and as Ardleigh is in the immediate vicinity of Much Bromley, it would appear that the first Symond was a descendant of the



"William at the stone," mentioned above. In a Court Roll of 1465 in the reign of Edward IV. reference is made to three fields in this locality called "Stoneland." The translation of the Latin record is as follows: "At this court the lords (of the Manor) through their Steward handed over and let at rent to Robert Rande three fields of land called Stoneland a parcel of Bovells:—to hold for himself and his assignees from the festival of the Holy Archangel Michael next coming after the present date up to the end and terminus of twenty years then following and fully completed."

*II. David Stone*, son of Symond Stone, lived at Much Bromley, County Essex, England, early in the sixteenth century.

*III. Symond (2) Stone*, son of David Stone, was of Much Bromley, where he married Agnes ———.

*IV. David (2) Stone*, son of Symond (2) and Agnes Stone, was born, lived and died at Much Bromley; he married Ursula ———. It has been proved that he and not Rev. Timothy Stone, as formerly supposed, was the father of the American emigrant, Gregory, mentioned below.

*V. Gregory Stone*, immigrant ancestor and founder, was baptized in Much Bromley, County Essex, England, April 19, 1592. According to his own deposition, made September 18, 1658, he was born in 1591 or 1592. His age at death, November 30, 1672, was given as eighty-two. The exact date of his coming to America is not known. He is thought to have come in company with his brother Simon, with whom he was admitted a freeman in Massachusetts, May 25, 1636. Gregory Stone was one of the original proprietors of Watertown, but resided most of his life in Cambridge. He had a considerable property here and his orchards were famous even at this early period. His farm was on the site of the Botanic Gardens of Harvard University. Gregory Stone was one of the most prominent men of his day in Cambridge. He was deputy to the Massachusetts General Court; deacon of the church, serving thirty-four years and outliving all the original membership; was a civil magistrate and one of the governor's deputies. His will, proved December 14, 1672, mentions his wife Lydia and her children by a former marriage, John Cooper and Lydia Fiske; his sons, Daniel, David, John and Samuel; daughters, Elizabeth Porter, Sarah Merriam, wife of David Merriam; grandson of David Stone. He married (first) in England, June 20, 1617, Margaret Garrad, who was born December 5, 1597, died August, 1626, in England. His second wife was Lydia Cooper, widow, who died June 24, 1674.

*VI. Deacon Samuel Stone*, son of Gregory and Margaret (Garrad) Stone, was baptized in Nayland, England, February 4, 1630-31, and died September 27, 1715. He came to America with his brothers and sister when very young. On attaining their majority, he and his brother David Stone, settled at Cambridge Farms (Lexington). It



is likely that they cleared their farms before removing to them, and that they were among the first settlers. Samuel Stone subscribed toward the first meeting house in 1692. In 1693 he paid the largest taxes in Lexington, and subsequently became the owner of what was one of the largest estates in the vicinity. He was a deacon of the church, town assessor, and member of many important committees. He married (first) June 7, 1655, at Watertown, Sarah Stearns; she died October 4, 1700. He married (second) Abigail ———, who died at Woburn, 1728, aged seventy-one years.

*VII. Deacon Samuel (2) Stone*, son of Deacon Samuel (1) and Sarah (Stearns) Stone, was born at Cambridge Farms, (Lexington) Massachusetts, October 1, 1656, and died there June 17, 1743. He was designated in the town records as "Samuel Stone, East," to distinguish him from his cousin "Samuel Stone, West." He was one of the original members of the Lexington church, in 1696. His wife was received from the Concord church in 1698. He married, June 12, 1679, Doreas Jones, of Concord, who died September 24, 1746, aged eighty-seven years. In November, 1715, Samuel Stone was chosen deacon to succeed his father. He was selectman in 1715-16 and 1723, and was prominent in the affairs of the town until his death.

*VIII. Sarah Stone*, daughter of Deacon Samuel (3) and Doreas (Jones) Stone, was born in Lexington, Massachusetts, in 1681. She became the wife of Thomas Cutler, of Lexington, and died January 10, 1750, aged sixty-nine years. She joined the church in Lexington, July 4, 1708. (See Cutler III).

(The Shearer Line.)

*Arms*—Argent a fesse gules between three torteaux, each charged with a mullet of the field argent.

*Crest*—On a chapeau a dexter hand holding up by the band a garb, all proper.

According to Bardsley the surname of Shearer is of the occupative class and signifies, "the shearer," that is one who sheared the nap of cloth, or a cloth shearmen. The name is found in Lincolnshire as early as 1273. The Shearer family herein dealt with is of ancient Irish origin, and was founded in the American Colonies in the early part of the eighteenth century. The progenitor, James Shearer, was a native of County Antrim, Ireland.

*I. James Shearer*, founder of the family in America, was born in County Antrim, Ireland, in 1678. In 1720 he emigrated to the New World, and settled in the town of Union, Connecticut. He remained in Union for a period of six years, and in 1726 his family and the Nevins family removed to Elbows, near the town of Palmer, Massachusetts. He occupied a central location in the district, his farm being laid out east from Cedar Swamp brook and south of Deacon Sedgwick's farm. He was a man of considerable prominence in the early community and several localities in the vicinity were named





## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

after him and his family. His home was frequently used by the proprietors of the town for their business meetings. The children of James Shearer were: 1. John, mentioned below. 2. James, Jr. 3. William.

*II. John Shearer*, son of James Shearer, was born in 1710, and accompanied his parents to America in 1720. He later settled in Brimfield, in the easterly part of what is now Three River Village. His children were: 1. Joseph. 2. John, born March 22, 1746; married, 1774, Jane White. 3. William, married Jerusha Perry. 4. Thomas. 5. David, married Kate King, 1791. 6. Jonathan, born March 29, 1762; married Hannah Dickinson. 7. Noah, married Terza Merrick, 1791. 8. Daniel, mentioned below. 9. Jane, married Wallace Little. 10. Betsey, married William White.

*III. Esquire Daniel Shearer*, son of John and Jane Shearer, was a prominent figure in the public and political life of the town of Palmer, Massachusetts, during his entire life. He was active also in judicial affairs. He married Sarah King, daughter of Jesse and Mary B. (Greyham) King, of Palmer, Massachusetts. (See King IV). Their children were: 1. Elvira, married A. V. Blanchard, October 25, 1827. 2. Jane, married William Blanchard, August 23, 1831. 3. Columbia, mentioned below.

*IV. Columbia Shearer*, third daughter of Judge Daniel and Sarah (King) Shearer, married, September 12, 1836, Nathan Moore Cutler, son of the Hon. Nathan and Hannah (Moore) Cutler. (See Cutler VII).

(The King Line.)

*Arms*—Sable on a chevron, or, between three crosses crosslet of the last, three escallops of the first. An esquire's helmet surmounts the shield.

Among the pioneer settlers of the town of Palmer, Massachusetts, and the immediate vicinity, was John King, Esq., the progenitor of the King family herein under consideration. The theory has been advanced that John King, Esq., was a resident of the town of Springfield, Massachusetts, prior to his coming to Palmer, as were many of the original settlers of the place. There has, however, been no proof to substantiate the theory. The Kings of Palmer in subsequent generations became large land owners, and were numbered among the most prominent and influential citizens of the town, active in civic and religious affairs, office holders, public servants, and civic and business leaders.

*I. John King*, the progenitor of the family and the immigrant ancestor, was born in England in 1681. The date of his coming to America is not known. Prior to his emigration he was married in England to Sarah ———, born in 1691. He became the first settler of the Elbow District, Hampshire county, Massachusetts, where he was the first to build a crude log cabin, camping out, tradition says, near the site of the old cemetery during the first few days there. He



finally located near the small stream which afterwards became known as King's brook. The noted Tamor spring divided his property from that of his neighbors, Richard Combs, of Springfield, and Ebenezer Mirick, of the same place. The following mention of the original John King and his family is found on the flyleaf of the first volume of the Rochester Church Records:

"On the 18th of May, 1729, then John King and Sarah, his wife, who lived at a place called the Elbows, in Hampshire Co., owned the covenant, and their children were baptized, viz: William, Thomas, Joseph, Benjamin, Aaron and Sarah, by me, who was sent by the proprietors of the land to minister to them. (Signed) Timothy Ruggles. Had the visit been six months later, the result might have been different."—Hardwick history, per Lucius Page, D. D.

The children of John and Sarah King were: 1. John, Jr., born in Boston, in 1715; married Margaret ———. 2. Joseph, born in 1716. 3. Thomas, born in 1719; married Jemima. 4. William, born in 1720. 5. Benjamin, born in 1722, died June 7, 1756. 6. Sarah, born in 1723. 7. Aaron, mentioned below. 8. Moses, died April 26, 1729. 9. Hannah, born August 8, 1729, died September 24, 1729. 10. Mary, born December 30, 1730; married Captain Sylvanus Walker. 11. David, born in April, 1733; married Mary Graham. 12. Jonathan, born January 17, 1736.

*II. Aaron King*, son of John and Sarah King, was born in 1725. He was a resident of Elbow District, Palmer, Massachusetts, all his life, and was a prominent resident of the place. He married Sarah Kibbe, of Connecticut. Their children were: 1. Sarah, born September 7, 1747; married Thomas Bliss, April 25, 1765. 2. Aaron, born July 2, 1750, died October 22, 1754. 3. Joseph, born August 20, 1752, died October 8, 1754. 4. Myrana, born September 7, 1755; married Charles Eddy. 5. Isaac, born June 20, 1757, resided in England. 6. Jesse, mentioned below.

*III. Capt. Jesse King*, son of Aaron and Sarah (Kibbe) King, was born in Elbow District, Palmer, Massachusetts, March 5, 1759. He was one of the most prominent citizens of the town during the greater part of his life time, and was actively identified with local affairs. He was also prominent in the militia and bore the rank of captain. He married, February 24, 1781, Mary B. Greyham, daughter of Rev. Mr. Greyham, of Pelham, Massachusetts. Their children were: 1. Aaron, born October 15, 1782; married Eliza Ketchum. 2. Sarah, mentioned below. 3. Myrana, born July 7, 1786; married Timothy Ferrell. 4. Nabbie, born August 11, 1788; married Gersham Makepeace, of Warren, Massachusetts. 5. Mary L., born August 9, 1790; married Daniel King, of Palmer. 6. Jesse, born August 8, 1792. 7. Isaac, born July 2, 1795; married Abby Cutler, of Warren, Massachusetts. 8. Joseph, born November 19, 1798; married Mary E. Chamber, and removed to Mobile, Alabama.



## McCLARY AND ALLIED FAMILIES

*IV. Sarah King*, daughter of Captain Jesse and Mary B. (Greyham) King, was born in Elbow District, Palmer, Massachusetts, October 22, 1784. She married Judge Daniel Shearer, of Palmer, Massachusetts. (See Shearer III).





## General Robert Anderson

*Arms*—Or, on a chevron gules, between three hawks' heads erased sable, as many acorns slipped argent.

*Crest*—An eagle's head erased argent holding in his beak paleways an arrow gules headed and feathered or.

*Motto*—*Nil desperandum, auspice Deo.*



AMONG the family names that for generations and even for centuries have been associated with the English-speaking peoples until they have gained a specially British character and are found wherever that race has gone, there is a large number that the student can recognize as having an earlier Scandinavian or Danish origin, and which were undoubtedly brought to Great Britain during the period when the hardy sea-raiders of the north were making incursion after incursion into the fair realm of our ancestors. The Norsemen were finally defeated, it is true, but they left numerous colonies in the land they had harried, the members of which gradually became an integral part of the people and introduced Norse customs and ideas into the life of England and many words, including proper names, into the language.

Among these names is that of Anderson, borne by a number of distinguished houses in various parts of England and Scotland for several centuries, and later transplanted to America, where it now enjoys a wellnigh universal distribution. Anderson belongs to that great group of surnames that have been derived from earlier given names, with the addition of the affix "son" or its equivalent, the name in this case being, of course, Andrew, a fact that has led certain authorities to claim it as originally Scottish. But in spite of the fact that Andrew has always been an exceedingly common name in Scotland, there are certain internal evidences strongly contradictory. Had the name been of recent origin, it might easily have been so, but in the day when the first Andersons made their home in Scotland, the Scottish equivalent of "son" was "mac," and the form which should and did arise there was MacAndrew or MacAndrews. So eminent an authority as Dr. Joseph Anderson, sometime president of the Society of Antiquities of Scotland, and himself a member of the family, emphatically denies the theory of Norse origin and stated in a letter to an historical investigator, that the Danes were defeated and driven from Scotland by Macbeth. In commenting upon this, however, the latter gentleman calls attention to Shakespeare's account of the matter where he says: "At St. Colmy's Inch; Ten thousand dollars to the general use," implying that, al-





though defeated and forced to pay a heavy tribute, they were nevertheless allowed to remain in the country. Mr. Anderson also remarks what is obviously true, that the Danes formed a perfectly definite and well recognized element in the population of Northumberland and other parts of Great Britain until they were finally merged in the homogeneous race that became the British peoples. A most interesting piece of evidence bearing upon the antiquity of the Anderson race is to be found in the existence of an old carved monolith in Sutherland, Scotland. Upon this crude shaft appear, arranged in chevron form, the heads of three seals which are said to bear a striking likeness to the hawks' heads that later were so prominent a part of the cognizance and arms of the Anderson family. Such transformations are common enough in heraldry, and it is entirely possible although nothing else has been found to confirm it, that the Andersons subsequently altered their ancient badge to suit some newer conditions and circumstances, but retained the original form of the chevron for their display.

Sutherland, the extreme northern point of Scotland, was a southern country to the Scandinavian peoples who gave it its name, and it was there that they first made their landing upon the unknown island which they so greatly coveted and which they in vain strove to subjugate through several centuries of almost ceaseless warfare. It was in Sutherland, in all probability, that the Andersons first appeared in Scotland, but, other than the very slight evidence of the seals' heads, there is no way of ascertaining whether they moved south from there to Northumberland, or whether separate landings were made by others bearing the same name. For it was in Northumberland and across the Tweed in Scotland that the earliest historical members of the family made their home. The first actual record of the name is to be found in an old Latin document of the time of Henry II, in which one Joseph Anderson is referred to as of Northumberland, and from that time on we have evidence that men bearing the name were numerous on both sides of the Tweed, and especially at Newcastle-on-Tyne, Northumberland. "The Visitations," as they were called, were the periodic visits of the King-at-Arms to various portions of the kingdom, to settled disputed points concerning titles, precedence, and the right to bear arms among the nobility and gentry of the region, and in the records of these Visitations in Northumberland the name Anderson occurs frequently. They are thus proven to have been of the aristocratic class that held so proud a place in the life of the mediæval ages and, indeed, it was to the Andersons of Newcastle-on-Tyne that the arms issued above were issued.

Those were rough times, especially along the border, and the men of that region had need of courage and enterprise if they were to maintain their place among their violent and almost barbarous



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

neighbors. But it was also an age of romance, when men, in a semi-conscious way, were great worshippers of high, if somewhat fantastic, ideals of conduct, and it is from that time that we inherit a surprising volume of poetry and beauty, giving a richness and fullness to our artistic and intellectual life that is scarcely to be duplicated. Life was a splendid and noble game to the men of that period in spite of the very grim realities that fenced them in, and in that, so high was their spirit, that love, honor, and even death itself, were all made to play their parts and valued as they contributed to the plot of the drama. If it be thought that this glamor is something that has been added by later ages, fascinated with the quaint ways and customs of the past, it is but necessary to turn to the authors and bards of the day to discover that they outdo the most ardent antiquarian in the extravagance of their praise of the chivalric view of life, then actual, but even today inspiring in retrospect. To this great heritage from the past the Scottish border has made a very great and special contribution. It was from that region that Sir Walter Scott drew so great a source of inspiration; it was from there that such great names of romance as those of Percy and de Multon for the English, Wallace and the Douglas for the Scots, have come down to us. Among these violent yet gorgeous figures, in the midst of this harsh yet splendid life, the Andersons made their way along the path of time, and all the evidence is to show that they rather more than maintained their position and prestige and grew in importance among their fellows from generation to generation, both while they could remain conspicuous as aristocrats and later, when the rising tide of democracy put all men on a more equal footing and brought everyone into a more direct competition with his neighbor.

Indeed, the Andersons in America, where they appeared early in the colonial period, were prominently identified with the rise of this very tide of democracy, members of the family having taken part in all the great struggles for liberty in which America, the country of their adoption, has engaged. The roles played by the men of the name have been of great distinction and value down to the time of the late General Robert Anderson, the gallant officer whose defense of Fort Sumter was one of the most striking and heroic incidents of the Civil War, for which, as well as for many other deeds of courage and self-sacrifice, his memory should be held in eternal honor and veneration by a grateful country.

The first Andersons to appear in America were two young men, brothers, Thomas and John Anderson, who were members of the Newcastle-on-Tyne family, and who made the voyage to the New World during the reign of Charles I, about 1634. They were followed the next year by Richard Anderson, who is believed to have been either a brother or the father of the others, and the three set-



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

tled at Tidewater, Virginia, for a time. A second family came shortly after the Restoration, and a third arrived later from the Bermuda Islands, whither they had been deported from England for participation in the rebellion led by the ill-starred Duke of Monmouth. All of these families made their home at Tidewater, but it is the first of these that we are concerned with. These three men—Thomas, John and Richard—moved after a comparatively short time from Tidewater up the Virginia coast and settled permanently in Hanover county, whence they were locally referred to as the Hanover Andersons. There is at this point a great dearth of records, so that the exact relationship of the next generation has never been proved, but there is indirect evidence sufficient to assure us of one fact, namely, that it was one of the three members of the first Anderson family that was the progenitor of the distinguished Virginia and Kentucky line. The proof of this lies in the fact that Robert Anderson, of the second generation, from whom there is traceable a perfectly clear descent, was born at a date when, according to Hotten's "Book of Immigrants," no Andersons other than these were present in the colony.

*I. Thomas Anderson* who, according to tradition, was the father of Robert Anderson, was one of the first two of the name to come to this country. He and his brother John sailed hither on the good ship "Bonaventura," and after residing at Tidewater removed to Hanover county. According to the late Col. Robert Waller, who, as a very old gentleman in 1866 told his friend, General Thomas McArthur Anderson, this, the first of the Anderson line, was engaged in the occupation of shipwright at Gloucester Point. It is not known whom he married, as the records of that region in the early period have been largely destroyed, but there is very little doubt that Robert Anderson who is mentioned below, was the son.

*II. Robert Anderson*; if his fatherhood as here given is not susceptible of positive proof, the possibility of error is at least limited to three men, who were probably father and sons, and certainly not more distantly related than brothers. The fact that there were no other colonists of the name in this country in the year 1644, or about which time Robert Anderson was born, is conclusive evidence on this point. Robert Anderson was granted seven hundred and twenty-seven acres of land, April 16, 1683, for the importation of fifteen persons into the colony, this tract being situated at New Kent. He was a prominent man in local affairs; a vestryman of St. Peter's Church at New Kent in 1686, and continued to hold that position until such time as the parish of St. Paul was formed out of a portion of the older parish in 1704. His death occurred in 1718, when about seventy-four years of age. He married Cecilia Massie, a member of the well known Virginia family of that name which made its appearance in this country about the same time as the



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

Andersons first settled here. They were the parents of the following children: Robert (2), who is mentioned at length below; Richard; David; Matthew; John; Thomas; Nelson; Mary; Cecilia.

*III. Robert (2) Anderson*, eldest son of Robert (1) and Cecilia (Massie) Anderson, was born about 1663, and died about 1716, some two years before his father, when fifty-three years of age. On October 23, 1690, he became possessed of the seven hundred and twenty-seven acres allotted to his father, and on the same date was granted an additional twelve hundred acres in consideration of the importation of twenty-four persons into the colony, thus becoming one of the large landowners of the region. Like his father, he was a vestryman of St. Peter's parish, and he was captain of the parish militia, a body that had been formed as early as 1612, when the whole colony was little more than an armed camp, for fear of the savages in the surrounding wilderness.

Robert (2) Anderson married Mary Overton, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Waters) Overton, natives of England, and sister of Capt. James Overton, who took part in the colonial wars with the Indians. They were the parents of the following children: Richard; James; Gailand; Matthew; David, of Albemarle; Robert (3), who is mentioned below; Nathaniel; Charles; John; and probably two daughters, Charity and Sarah.

*IV. Robert (3) Anderson*, known as Robert of Goldmine, sixth son of Robert (2) and Mary (Overton) Anderson, was born January 1, 1712, and died December 9, 1792. His handsome estate gained the name of "Goldmine," from the stream of that name that flowed through it into the South Anna river. He not only was one of the wealthiest and most important members of the community, but took an active part in public affairs in the colony, and held a number of offices in the gift of the community. He was a magistrate in 1768, and in 1745 represented Louisa county in the House of Burgesses. Robert (3) Anderson married, July 3, 1739, Elizabeth Clough, born April 3, 1713 and died Nov. 10, 1779, a daughter of Richard and Anne (Poindexter) Clough, and granddaughter of Richard Poindexter, the founder of that distinguished family in America. They were the parents of the following children: Richard, died in infancy; Robert, born Aug. 10, 1741, married Elizabeth Shelton; Matthew, born Dec. 6, 1743, died Dec. 24, 1806, married Mary Dabney; Ann, born Jan. 21, 1745, became the wife of Anthony New; Cecilia, born August 2, 1748, became the wife of William Anderson; Richard Clough, mentioned below; Elizabeth, born Nov. 24, 1752, became the wife of Reuben Austin; George, born May 27, 1755, married (first) — Goldsborough, (second) Jane Tucker; Samuel, born June 25, 1757, married Ann Dabney; Mary, born in May, 1759, married (first) Capt. John Anderson, (second) Elkanah Talley; Charles, born May 10, 1762, died unmarried.





## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

*V. Richard Clough Anderson*, eighth child of Robert (3) and Elizabeth (Clough) Anderson, was born January 12, 1750, and died October 15, 1826. The life in Virginia at that period was peculiarly well fitted to produce the highest type of manhood and citizenship, the environment contributing in almost equal degree the factors of culture and refinement imported by the colonists from the old and highly developed civilization of Europe, and the invigorating and fibre-hardening frontier existence. It was under such influences that Richard Clough Anderson grew to manhood, and the result was what we find in so many of the great men of that period, a combination of gentleness and strength, an almost rugged character overlaid with the amenities of civilized intercourse that make them especially effective in dealing with uncompromising conditions of life, to say nothing of rendering them among the most attractive and romantic figures of history. As a lad young Anderson spent most of his time in hunting and trips of exploration through what was then the uncharted wilderness, a pastime containing many elements of danger and hardship. As he approached manhood, the disputes between the colonies and Great Britain and the growing oppression of the king grew more acute and frequent, and it became obvious to the more courageous and clear-sighted that only a conflict could settle the matter. Committees of safety were appointed in all the colonies, and Richard Clough Anderson became prominent on that in Virginia. From the outset, his sympathies and efforts were entirely on the side of the cause of liberty, and he worked with a devotion and single-mindedness that places him a most patriotic and courageous man of the time. Like his father, who also took part in these stirring proceedings as far as his advanced age would permit, he was a warm personal friend of Patrick Henry, and followed that inspired leader unreservedly. As the matter drew to a head and force became necessary, he volunteered for the service, and was in 1775 appointed quartermaster of the Hanover minute-men. On March 7th in the year following, he was commissioned captain of a company of regular troops which formed a part of the Fifth Virginia Regiment under Col. Charles Scott, who afterwards became governor of Kentucky. This regiment was quickly in the thick of the fighting, and with it Captain Anderson saw action at White Plains, Oct. 7, 1776; Trenton, December 25-26 of the same year, and many other engagements of the first order. He displayed so much gallantry in action that he was placed in command of the Fifth Virginia in June, 1777, and, although still retaining his rank of captain, commanded that body of veterans at Brandywine, Germantown, Valley Forge, Monmouth, Savannah and Charleston. At Savannah, Oct. 9, 1779, he was severely wounded, but recovered in time to take part in the engagement at Charleston, May 12, 1780, when he, along with the whole army, was sur-



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

rendered to the British by Gen. Lincoln. Capt. Anderson remained a prisoner for about nine months and was then exchanged, and once more took the field with the army. He had been commissioned major by the Continental Congress, March 20, 1779, and after his exchange and release was ordered to report to Gen. Lafayette, to whom his knowledge of the French language and his great familiarity with the country where that officer was campaigning, made him invaluable. He remained with Lafayette until the beginning of the operations against Yorktown, and was then sent to assist Gen. Nelson in mobilizing and organizing a militia. He was appointed adjutant-general with the nominal rank of colonel, and remained with Nelson for a short period after the surrender of Cornwallis. He was then commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Third Virginia Regiment, and held that post until the grand muster-out in 1783. At that time he had served in all seven years and ten months, with the greatest gallantry and distinction, and the *Richmond Despatch*, of Jan. 21, 1861, in commenting upon his record, made the statement that "there was no braver officer in the American army."

In the autumn of 1783, after the return of peace, he was appointed the principal surveyor of the western lands reserved to pay the soldiers of the Virginia line, and later his title was made surveyor-general. He remained in charge of this important work until his death, Oct. 16, 1826, and performed a great service to his country and State in the efficient manner in which he handled this difficult matter. His death was due in large measure to the indirect action of his old wound, received at Savannah in 1779, so that it may truly be said that, as much as those who fell upon the field of honor, he gave his life for liberty and his country.

While wounded and a prisoner at Charleston, Col. Anderson made the acquaintance and became intimate with Lieut.-Col. Jonathan Clark, of the Eighth Virginia, Capt. John Clark, and Edmund Clark, three brothers, prisoners like himself, and this friendship continued after the war, and finally led up to his marriage with their sister. Col. Anderson was one of those who at the Danville Convention successfully opposed the efforts of Wilkinson and Sebastian to induce Kentucky to declare its independence of the Union and form an alliance with Spain. He was a founder of the Society of the Cincinnati, and himself a charter member. After his appointment as surveyor-general of the Virginia Military Land District, he established an office at Louisville, Kentucky, near the "Soldiers' Retreat," and there made his home until the close of his life.

Colonel Richard Clough Anderson married (first), Nov. 24, 1787, Elizabeth Clark, daughter of John and Ann (Rogers) Clark, and sister of his three comrades. She died without issue, Jan. 15, 1795, and Col. Clark married (second) Sept. 17, 1797, Sarah Marshall, a



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

rendered to the British by Gen. Lincoln. Capt. Anderson remained a prisoner for about nine months and was then exchanged, and once more took the field with the army. He had been commissioned major by the Continental Congress, March 20, 1779, and after his exchange and release was ordered to report to Gen. Lafayette, to whom his knowledge of the French language and his great familiarity with the country where that officer was campaigning, made him invaluable. He remained with Lafayette until the beginning of the operations against Yorktown, and was then sent to assist Gen. Nelson in mobilizing and organizing a militia. He was appointed adjutant-general with the nominal rank of colonel, and remained with Nelson for a short period after the surrender of Cornwallis. He was then commissioned lieutenant-colonel of the Third Virginia Regiment, and held that post until the grand muster-out in 1783. At that time he had served in all seven years and ten months, with the greatest gallantry and distinction, and the *Richmond Despatch*, of Jan. 21, 1861, in commenting upon his record, made the statement that "there was no braver officer in the American army."

In the autumn of 1783, after the return of peace, he was appointed the principal surveyor of the western lands reserved to pay the soldiers of the Virginia line, and later his title was made surveyor-general. He remained in charge of this important work until his death, Oct. 16, 1826, and performed a great service to his country and State in the efficient manner in which he handled this difficult matter. His death was due in large measure to the indirect action of his old wound, received at Savannah in 1779, so that it may truly be said that, as much as those who fell upon the field of honor, he gave his life for liberty and his country.

While wounded and a prisoner at Charleston, Col. Anderson made the acquaintance and became intimate with Lieut.-Col. Jonathan Clark, of the Eighth Virginia, Capt. John Clark, and Edmund Clark, three brothers, prisoners like himself, and this friendship continued after the war, and finally led up to his marriage with their sister. Col. Anderson was one of those who at the Danville Convention successfully opposed the efforts of Wilkinson and Sebastian to induce Kentucky to declare its independence of the Union and form an alliance with Spain. He was a founder of the Society of the Cincinnati, and himself a charter member. After his appointment as surveyor-general of the Virginia Military Land District, he established an office at Louisville, Kentucky, near the "Soldiers' Retreat," and there made his home until the close of his life.

Colonel Richard Clough Anderson married (first), Nov. 24, 1787, Elizabeth Clark, daughter of John and Ann (Rogers) Clark, and sister of his three comrades. She died without issue, Jan. 15, 1795, and Col. Clark married (second) Sept. 17, 1797, Sarah Marshall, a





Robert Anderson





## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

second cousin of his first wife, and of the same degree of consanguinity from the great Chief Justice, John Marshall, to whom more than any one other man is due the place that our courts, and especially the Supreme Court, occupy in the political structure of the commonwealth. Of the second marriage of Col. Richard Clough Anderson were born Richard Clough, Jr., and Robert, with whose career we are here especially concerned.

*VI. Gen. Robert Anderson*—There are few names that appeal more strongly to the imagination, even in the stirring period of our great Civil War, than that of General Robert Anderson, the heroic defender of Fort Sumter who, in holding for so long that forlorn hope, defended also the dignity of his country and the honor of his flag.

Born June 14, 1805, at "Soldiers' Retreat," his father's home near Louisville, Kentucky, Robert Anderson passed his childhood in his native place and there received the elementary portion of his education. He was twenty years of age when in 1825 he graduated from the West Point Military Academy. His military history may be epitomized as follows:

Cadet at Military Academy, July 1, 1821, to July 1, 1825, when he was graduated and commissioned brevet second lieutenant, Second Artillery; promoted second lieutenant, Third Artillery, 1826.

Private secretary to his brother, Richard Clough Anderson, Jr., United States Minister Plenipotentiary and Envoy Extraordinary to Colombia, 1825-26.

Garrison duty, Fortress Monroe, 1826-28; ordnance duty, March 8, 1828, to May 9, 1832.

Staff colonel and inspector-general of Illinois, May 9 to October 11, 1832, in Black Hawk War. During this period he once mustered into service, and twice mustered out, Abraham Lincoln (afterward President), who served as a captain in that war. Col. Anderson was placed in charge of the Indians captured at Bad Axe, and conducted Black Hawk to Jefferson Barracks; as he was just recovering from fever, he was assisted by Lieut. Jefferson Davis, afterwards President of the Southern Confederacy.

On ordnance duty, Dec. 6, 1834, to May 5, 1835; and garrison duty, Fort Constitution, N. H., 1835.

At United States Military Academy, 1835-37; assistant instructor of artillery, Sept. 10 to December 1, 1835, and instructor, Dec. 1, 1835, to Nov. 6, 1837.

In Florida War against Seminole Indians, 1837-38; brevetted captain for gallantry and successful conduct.

On duty in Cherokee Nation, a. d. c. to Maj. Gen. Scott, May 9 to July 7, 1838.

Assistant adjutant-general, Eastern Department, July 7, 1838, to July, 1841.

In garrison, Fort Moultrie, South Carolina, 1845-46; at Fort Marion, Florida, 1846; at Fort Brooke, Florida, 1846-47.

In Mexican War, in siege of Vera Cruz, March 9-20, 1847; battle of Cerro Gordo, April 14-18, 1847; skirmish at Amazoque, May 14, 1847; battle of Molino del Rey, Sept. 8, 1847; first to enter the mill and severely wounded.

Garrison duty, Fort Preble, Maine, 1850-53.

Governor of Harrodsburg Branch, Military Asylum, Kentucky, June 11, 1853, to Nov. 1, 1854.

Member of Board for Armament of Fortifications, 1854-55.

Major First Artillery, Oct. 5, 1857. Charge of programme of instruction for Artillery School of Practice, Fortress Monroe, 1859-60.

In command of defences in Charleston (South Carolina) Harbor, 1860-61.

Commissioned Brigadier-general by President Lincoln, and in command of Department of Kentucky, May 28 to Aug. 15, 1861; and of Department of the Cumberland, August 15 to Oct. 8, 1861.

Waiting orders, in ill health, 1861-63.



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

In command at Fort Adams, Rhode Island, Aug. 19 to Oct. 27, 1863, and at New York City, Department of the East.

Retired from active service Oct. 29, 1863, "for disability resulting from long and faithful service and wounds and disease contracted in the line of duty."

In Department of the East, Oct. 27, 1863, to Jan. 22, 1864.

Brevetted major-general, U. S. A., Feb. 3, 1865, "for gallant and meritorious service in the Harbor of Charleston, South Carolina, in the defense of Fort Sumter.

Under orders by President Lincoln, re-raised at Fort Sumter, April 14, 1865, the same flag he had lowered with honors of war when he evacuated the fort on the same date in 1861.

Proposer and organizer of the Alumni of West Point, 1869; first meeting held at the College of New York.

The most important episode in the career of General Anderson is one of the best known in the Civil War, and was, indeed, the opening engagement in that historic struggle. What are not so well known, perhaps, are the many difficulties and obstacles he had to face, and the terrible responsibility which rested upon him in every decision he made in that momentous time. Pressure was brought to bear upon him from all quarters to surrender his charge, for his foes were not confined to the ranks of the enemies of his country. Thrown upon his own resources, without means of communication with his superiors, it was a difficult question that he faced, and one the answering of which he felt was in a measure the answer of the nation. In the words of a delightful little volume entitled "Major Anderson and Fort Sumter," written by his daughter, Mrs. James Marsland Lawton of New York City, his course in this extremity is thus described.

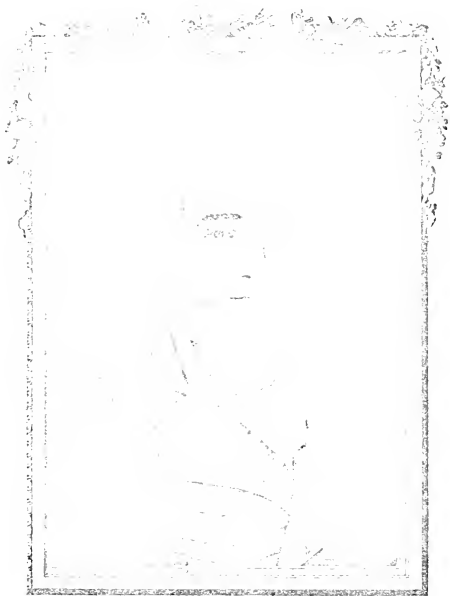
"In this emergency, Anderson turned to God in prayer, and under the divine guidance he was able to escape the snare that had been set for him. He abandoned Fort Moultrie, but took his troops to Fort Sumter, which he promptly put in a defensive state, and prepared to hold it as long as the conditions would permit. He had about eighty men (counting officers and the band) to make good his position, and when the Rebels finally arrived they numbered something in the neighborhood of ten thousand, but in spite of this discrepancy, he held on until, in his own words, in his report to Washington:

" 'Having defended Fort Sumter for thirty-six hours, until the quarters were entirely burned, the main gates destroyed by fire, the gorge walls seriously impaired, the magazine surrounded by flames, and its door closed from the effects of heat, four barrels and three cartridges of powder only being available, and no provisions remaining but pork, I accepted terms of evacuation offered by General Beauregard, and marched out of the Fort on Sunday afternoon, the fourteenth instant, with colors flying and drums beating, bringing away company and private property, and saluting my flag with fifty guns.' "



Robert Anderson





D. Birch,





## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

The terms offered by Beauregard were the same that had been offered him before the defense, and were, that he be allowed "to withdraw his garrison, taking with him all the property, public and private, and saluting his flag." How greatly the Confederates respected the heroic conduct of Major Anderson may be seen in the fact of their enthusiastic greeting to him and his men as they marched out of the fort. "The rebels lined their batteries and cheered the garrison as the men left the fort and passed out to the fleet beyond the bar." The enthusiasm of Major Anderson's reception in New York was heartfelt and beyond all words to express. The horses were taken from the carriage, and it was drawn by men. Women held up their babies to be blessed by him.

Although Major Anderson's health had been greatly impaired by the terrible experience he had been through, and the still more terrible responsibility, and although agreed that a rest was imperative, he nevertheless put aside all personal considerations and hastened to the aid of his country in a position in which he alone could aid it. He was notified by the Legislature of Kentucky, through the President, that he was the only Union officer who would be allowed to recruit through the State's borders, and he at once responded, determined to save if possible his native State "from the sin of secession." He was conspicuously successful, and not only organized the Army of the Cumberland but so directed public opinion that Kentucky finally remained with the Union.

One of the most dramatic moments in the life of General Anderson was when, on the 14th of April, 1865, four years after his evacuation of Fort Sumter, he raised over its ruins the identical flag he had lowered on that occasion. The flag is now preserved in a glass case in the office of the Secretary of War at Washington. Shortly after, the President commissioned Major Anderson a brigadier-general, and in 1865 he was brevetted major-general as a reward for the gallantry and value of his services. During the major part of the war he was relieved from active duty on account of his broken health, but remained in service in New York and Newport. He was a great student of tactics and strategy, and translated a number of valuable French works, the "Instructions for Field Artillery, Horse and Foot" (1840), and "Evolutions of Field Batteries," (1860).

General Anderson was united in marriage, March 26, 1842, with Eliza Bayard Clinch, a daughter of General Duncan Lamont Clinch, United States Army, and Eliza Bayard (Mackintosh) Clinch, his wife. To General and Mrs. Anderson were born the following children: Marie L.; Sophie C.; Eliza Mackintosh Clinch, who became the wife of James Marsland Lawton; Robert, Jr.; and Duncan Lamont Clinch, of whom the last two are deceased.



## GENERAL ROBERT ANDERSON

In the year 1869 General Anderson went abroad in the hope of renewing his health, and for a time was in the south of France. There his death occurred October 27, 1871, at Nice.

The man-of-war "Guerriere" was sent over for his body, which was brought to Fortress Monroe, where it was given the most imposing ceremonies from the Navy and the Army, and lay in chapel until it was taken to New York, before being taken to West Point, where it now reposes. A public funeral was held in New York.

Centennial services of General Anderson's birth were held at West Point on June 14, 1905. A memorial window in his honor has just been finished for the chapel.

"Long after Fort Sumter shall have crumbled away, brightly will stand forth the example of Anderson as that of a soldier true to his standard, and of an American true to his country."—Senator Crittenden's last words to the Senate.





## Editorial

---

### A REVERED MEMORY

On preceding pages of this Magazine, is an interesting narrative concerning General Robert Anderson, the distinguished soldier who is famous in history as the heroic defender of Fort Sumter, in Charleston Harbor, during those dreadful days which marked the beginning of four years of fratricidal strife.

Among the children of General Anderson was Eliza Mackintosh Clinch Anderson, who became the wife of the late Mr. James Marsland Lawton. Mrs. Lawton was devoted to the memory of her illustrious father, and it was but recently that she gave to the chapel of the United States Military Academy at West Point a fine chime of bells in his honor. Among her very latest acts was the committal to the editor of this Magazine certain data of which he made use in the narrative in these pages, before-mentioned, relating to General Anderson and his ancestry, as well as her verification of the written matter—this, too, but a few days before her death, which occurred August 22nd, 1919.

The editor may be pardoned for a slight indulgence in reminiscence. As a young officer in General Sherman's army, he came to New York City on a military errand, early in April, 1865, immediately after that army had reached the Carolina coast after its March through Georgia. He was a westerner (from Illinois), and an entire stranger here, but in the hotel lobby he attracted much friendly attention from the many army and navy officers about, all easterners. Among these was General Robert Anderson, who invited the young officer to his home, his carriage being at the curb. The invitation was accepted, and two nights were passed most pleasantly. The young man, the first of Sherman's soldiers whom the General had met, was led into a narrative relation of the campaign against Atlanta, the March to the Sea, and the subsequent campaign in the Carolinas. Among his auditors, and most deeply interested ones, he pleasurably recalls, were the General's daughters, girls just budding



## EDITORIAL

into young womanhood, and among them she who became Mrs. Lawton. In view of the foregoing, the reader may realize in some degree the real sentimental interest with which the editor has performed his task in connection with the career of the distinguished old soldier who treated him so cordially, as well as in association with the fine woman who as daughter and patriot, and almost with her last breath, paid her tribute to a father whom history will ever honor as one of America's staunchest patriots and most true-hearted soldiers.

---

## LITERARY NOTES

"Seannell's New Jersey's First Citizens, and State Guide," comes to us from its very industrious editor, Mr. James J. Seannell, of Paterson, New Jersey. This is the second volume of the publication, and much more comprehensive than its predecessor. Its design, and in which it proves pleasingly successful, is to give in brief all pertinent facts with reference to the really useful men (and women) of its State. The volume contains more than three hundred more sketches than appeared in the first publication of 1917, and presents an aggregate of seven hundred and twenty-nine persons of note in the various walks of life. In addition, there are supplemental pages—a State Guide, with information as to the various State departments and institutions, with mention of their various officials; a vocational index embracing the professions and other principal occupations; and a geographical index, for the location of the individuals written of in the work. The volume in its entirety is a monument of industry and perseverance.

"Wit, Wisdom and Foibles of the Great," is the title of an ample volume concerning men and women who have figured largely on the pages of history, but in larger part is a compilation of anecdotes illustrative of the characters of notables in modern historical times. It represents an immense amount of careful labor by the "compiler," Mr. Charles A. Shriner, of Paterson, New Jersey, who on his title page uses the word we have quoted (compiler) in place of the usual "author." Published by the Funks & Wagnall Company.





STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC.

REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUGUST 24, 1912.

OF AMERICANA, published Quarterly at Somerville, New Jersey, for Oct. 1st, 1919.

City and State of New York, } ss.  
County of New York, }

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and county aforesaid, personally appeared Marion L. Lewis, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the Vice-President and Manager of the "Americana," (Amer. Hist. Society, Inc.), and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 443, Postal Laws and Regulations, printed on the reverse of this form, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, The American Historical Society, Inc. Editor, Fenwick Y. Hedley, No. 267 Broadway, New York. Managing Editor, Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, New York. Business Manager, Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, New York.

2. That the owners are: Benjamin F. Lewis, Sr., No. 908 Central avenue, Wilmette, Ill.; Marion L. Lewis, No. 267 Broadway, N. Y.; Metcalfe B. Hatch, Nutley, N. J.; Ed. Lewis, No. 2121 Foster avenue, Brooklyn, N. Y.; Florence A. Kelsey, Great Barrington, Mass.; Benjamin F. Lewis, Jr., 542 South Dearborn street, Chicago, Ill.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

M. L. LEWIS, Business Manager.

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 29th day of September, 1919.

O. H. RAYMOND,  
Notary Public of New York City



# INDEX

Vol. XIII.

January, 1919—December, 1919.

Abraham Lincoln's Mother, A Sketch of, Lucy Porter Higgins..	156
Adams, Samuel, Biographical Sketch .....	238
Aftermath, The (Editorial) .....	111
Alden, John, Biographical Sketch .....	225
American History, The Lottery in, Howard A. Rogers.....	40
Loyalists in South Wales, E. Alfred Jones.....	146
Anderson, General Robert, Biographical Sketch.....	414
Arts and Literature in Lowell, Mass. (Illustrated.) Frederick W. Coburn .....	336
Arctic Disaster of 1871, the Great.....	103
Bassett and Allied Families .....	275
Battles in Time of Peace. (Editorial) .....	321
Beginnings of New England (Illustrated) .....	215
Beginnings of Prohibition, The (Illustrated) Louis C. Hatch...	323
Beginnings of Worcester, Mass. (Illustrated) Charles Nutt....	11
Belden and Allied Families .....	393
Boucher, John N., Early Transportation .....	113
Bradford, William, Biographical Sketch .....	221
Brewster, William, Biographical Sketch .....	220
Brockway and Allied Families.....	385
Coburn, Frederick W., Art and Literature in Lowell, Mass.....	336
Cotton, John, Biographical Sketch .....	227
Danielson, Lockwood Families .....	198
Davenport, John, Biographical Sketch .....	228
Delano-Hitch Families .....	300
Deming and Allied Families .....	235
Dowley-Esterbrook Families, The .....	186
Duer and Allied Families .....	292
Early Transportation (Illustrated) John N. Boucher.....	113



Eaton, Arthur W. H., Chapters in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia, No. XIII.....	21
Eaton, Arthur W. H., Chapters in the History of Halifax, Nova Scotia, No. XIV .....	253
Eaton, Theophilus, Biographical Sketch .....	236
Editorials .....	109, 208, 320, 425
Eliot, John, Biographical Sketch .....	229
Endicott, John, Biographical Sketch .....	232
Ensign-Stratton Family, The .....	193
Esterbrook-Dowley Families, The .....	186
Goodwin and Allied Families .....	55
Halifax, Nova Scotia, Chapters in History of, Arthur W. H. Eaton, No. XIII.....	21
Halifax, Nova Scotia, Chapters in History of, Arthur W. H. Eaton, No. XIV .....	253
Hancock, John, Biographical Sketch .....	242
Hatch, Louis C., The Beginnings of Prohibition.....	323
Hartwell, Frederick W., Biographical Sketch .....	317
Higgins, Lucy Porter, A Sketch of Abraham Lincoln's Mother..	156
Higgins, Lucy Porter, When and Where the First Ships were built in New England .....	241
Higginson, Francis, Biographical Sketch .....	226
Hill and Allied Families .....	69, 367
Historical Perspective, The (Editorial) .....	320
Hitch-Delano Families .....	300
Hooker, Thomas, Biographical Sketch .....	228
Illinois in History .....	167
Jackson, Dr. Hall, Biographical Sketch .....	94
Jones, E. Alfred, American Loyalists in South Wales.....	146
Leach and Allied Families .....	177
Lincoln's Mother, A Sketch of Abraham, Lucy Porter Higgins..	156
Library Notes .....	190, 210, 426
Littell-Unglich Families .....	311
Lockwood, Danielson Families .....	198
Lottery in American History, The, Howard O. Rogers.....	40
Lowell, Mass., Arts and Literature in (Illustrated) Frederick W. Coburn .....	336
McClary and Allied Families .....	401
McVickar, Rt. Rev. William Nelson, Genealogical Sketch.....	306



# INDEX

v

New England, Beginnings of (Illustrated) .....	215
New England, When and Where the First Ships were built in (Illustrated) Lucy Porter Higgins .....	244
Nutt, Charles, Beginnings of Worcester, Mass. (Illustrated) .....	1
Nutt, Charles, Biographical Sketch .....	212
Otis, James, Biographical Sketch .....	240
Phips, Sir William, Biographical Sketch .....	234
Post-Hiller Families .....	81
Pynchon, William, Biographical Sketch .....	236
Revered Memory, A (Editorial) .....	425
Rogers, Howard O., The Lottery in American History .....	40
Standish, Myles, Biographical Sketch .....	223
Stowell, Prof., Theodore Barrows, Biographical Sketch.....	89
Stratton-Ensign Family, The .....	193
Ungrich-Littell Families .....	311
When and Where Some of the First Ships were built in New England, (Illustrated) Lucy Porter Higgins .....	244
Williams, Roger, Biographical Sketch .....	230
Winslow, Edward, Biographical Sketch .....	222
Winthrop, John, Biographical Sketch .....	233
Winthrop, John, The Younger, Biographical Sketch .....	234
World War, The Great (Editorial) .....	109
World War, Lessons of (Editorial) .....	208
Worcester, Mass., Beginnings of (Illustrated) Charles Nutt ....	1





# ILLUSTRATIONS

---

	FACING PAGE
Adams, Samuel, Portrait .....	239
Anderson, General Robert, Steel Engraving .....	421
Anderson, General Robert, Steel Engraving .....	422
Arrival of the Train, The .....	140
Bancroft's Birthplace, Portrait, Tower and Grave.....	12
Bassett, Charles F., Steel Engraving .....	277
Blackstone Canal, Worcester, Mass., about 1830.....	129
Brockway, Ulysses Hayden, Portrait .....	386
Canal Boat Scene as described by Charles Dickens.....	132
City Hall and Monument Square, Lowell, Mass.....	336
City Hall, Portland, Maine .....	325
Civil War Soldier's Monument, Worcester, Mass.....	19
Clinch, General Duncan Lamont, Steel Engraving .....	423
Colonial Warehouses, Delaware River at Easton.....	135
Common at Worcester, Mass., 1849, The.....	4
Conant, Hannah Leach, Steel Engraving Between Pages....	184, 185
Conestoga Wagon, 1825 .....	126
Court House, Worcester, Mass., 1864.....	14
Cutler, Nathan, Steel Engraving .....	406
Delano, Warren, Steel Engraving .....	304
Dow, Neal, Portrait .....	333
Dowley, George Stevens, Steel Engraving .....	186
Early Springfield, Mass., with view of Connecticut River.....	142
End of the Voyage, The .....	252
Ensign, Dwight Watts, Steel Engraving .....	196
Esterbrook, Adeline S., Steel Engraving Between Pages ...	190, 191
Esterbrook, W. H., Steel Engraving Between Pages.....	190, 191
Ferry House of David Martin, Easton, Pennsylvania .....	135
From an Old Painting by William A. Wall.....	244
Forbes, Rev. Eli, Steel Engraving .....	62
Fort Allen, Portland, Maine .....	328
Fort Hill Park, Lowell, Mass. ....	341
Goodwin, Charles Clinton, Steel Engraving .....	56



Hancock, John, Portrait .....	243
Hartwell, Frederick W., Steel Engraving .....	317
Hill, Robert W., Steel Engraving .....	367
Hill, Seth, Steel Engraving .....	71
Hiller, Elizabeth P., Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	88, 89
Hitch, Frederic Delano, Steel Engraving .....	305
Home of Harriet Beecher Stowe, Brunswick, Maine, where Uncle Tom's Cabin was written. ....	329
Home of the Pearls, Orr's Island, Maine .....	328
Hurlburt, Henry C., Portrait .....	279
Landing of the Pilgrim Fathers, Frontispiece .....	No. 3
Leach, James C., Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	178, 179
Leach, Phebe Conant, Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	178, 179
Lockwood, Amos D., Steel Engraving .....	204
Longfellow Home, Portland, Maine .....	323
Longfellow's Birthplace, Portland, Maine .....	323
Looking Down the Merrimac River from Anthony Street, Lowell, Mass. ....	348
Lucy Larcom Park, Lowell, Mass. ....	341
McClary, Jennie Cutler, Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	402, 403
McClary, John, Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	402, 403
McVickar, William Nelson, Steel Engraving .....	307
Mayflower, The .....	215
Memorial Building and Public Library, Lowell, Mass. ....	340
New Bedford Wharves in Palmy Days of Whaling .....	249
Newark's Statue of Abraham Lincoln .....	156
Nobility Hill, Worcester, Mass. ....	8
North Entrance of the Village of Worcester, Mass., 1841 .....	4
Norton, Seth Porter, Portrait .....	389
Old and New, The .....	140
Old Post Homestead, Old Westbury, Long Island .....	82
Old Time Scene in Easton, Pennsylvania .....	137
Old View of Main Street, Worcester, Mass. ....	8
Otis, James, Portrait .....	240
Pawtucket Falls .....	349
Phelps, Captain William Dane, Steel Engraving .....	59
Plymouth, Mass., in 1622 .....	223
Plymouth Rock .....	219
Portland Headlights, Portland Harbor, Maine .....	328
Post, E., Steel Engraving .....	85



Post, Joseph, Steel Engraving, Between Pages .....	86, 87
Post, Mary, Steel Engraving .....	86, 87
Post Office, Portland, Maine.....	325
Pyncheon, William, Steel Engraving .....	236
Railroad and Steamboat Mail Stage Lines, Poster.....	145
Residence of James Blaine, Augusta, Maine.....	329
Residence of James Post, Old Westbury, Long Island.....	83
Residence of Mrs. George S. Dowley, Brattleboro, Vt., Steel En- graving .....	188
Residence of Mrs. John McClary, Hartford, Conn., Steel En- graving .....	403
Spanish War Memorial, Army Square, Worcester, Mass.....	16
Stage Coach, Pittsburgh and Philadelphia .....	118
State Capitol, Augusta, Maine, Frontispiece .....	No. 4
State Normal School, Lowell, Mass.....	340
Stratton, Flavel Coolidge, Steel Engraving.....	195
Stratton, Ira, Steel Engraving, Between Pages.....	194, 195
Stratton, Martha A., Steel Engraving, Between Pages.....	194, 195
Stowell, Prof. Theodore Barrows, Steel Engraving.....	90
Suit of Armor presented to City of Worcester, Mass. Frontispiece No. 1	
Union Station, Portland, Maine.....	325
Unrivalled Express Rider, Ginery Twichell, The .....	113
Views of Different Court Houses Worcester, Mass.....	14
Whaler Hove down for Repairs .....	249
Whalers Ready for the Voyage.....	247
White Mountain Touring Coach, A .....	124
Winthrop, John, Portrait .....	233















